

Index

The First World War La Première Guerre mondiale From Day-to-Day De Jour en Jour

Referencing: [150412] Year 15 = 1915; Month 04= April; Day 12 → 12 April 1915

System [150412,8,20-2,0502,5] → 12, 18, 20-22 April, and 2 and 5 May, 1915

Preliminary Notes

- Entries of this Index reflect information, but not all information, found in the daily research notes of the Friends of the Canadian War Museum's web site's «Resource»: **The First World War Day-by-Day**.
- Multi-page entries are set in color for clarity of organization.
- Because of the extreme difficulty in attempting to produce an Index in two languages, information referring to texts in French is here mostly set in English. Approximately 22% of daily research notes to which these entries refer are in French.
- Information pertaining to many subjects is often repeated. However, entries may refer to other entries (ex.: See **Battles of/Somme, /Verdun; Pétain**).
- The information contained in this Index or in the daily research notes of this program do not necessarily reflect views of the Canadian War Museum (CWM), or the Friends of the CWM.
- These documents were produced to help students find information on the First World War, and appreciate the help offered for their studies by the research library and archives of the Military History Research Center (MHRC) of the CWM.

Notes préliminaires

- Les rubriques de cet Index donnent de l'information, mais pas toute l'information, qui se trouve dans les notes de recherche quotidiennes de «*Resources*» du site Internet des Amis du Musée canadien de la Guerre (AMCG): **La Première Guerre mondiale de Jour en Jour**.
- Les rubriques qui couvrent plusieurs pages sont en couleur, pour clarifier l'organisation.
- Dû à l'extrême difficulté de produire un Index en deux langues, l'information qui fait référence à des textes en français est donnée ici surtout en anglais. Environ 22% des notes de recherche quotidiennes auxquelles ces rubriques font référence sont en français.
- L'information qui est pertinente à plusieurs rubriques est souvent répétée dans chacune. Toutefois, les rubriques peuvent reporter à d'autres rubriques (ex.: **Battles of/Somme, /Verdun; Pétain**).
- L'information contenue dans cet Index ou dans les notes de recherche quotidiennes ne représente pas nécessairement les vues du Musée canadien de la Guerre (MCG) ou des AMCG.
- Ces documents ont été produits pour aider les étudiants à trouver de l'information au sujet de la Première Guerre mondiale, et apprécier les bénéfices, pour leurs études, des sources de recherche offertes par la bibliothèque et le fonds d'archives du Centre de Recherches en Histoire Militaire (CRHM) du MCG.

A

Africa. See Battles of.

Aircraft development. The 'Fokker Scourge' of the 'Eindecker' [150903]; *les aérostats et cerfs-volants d'observation de l'aviation française* [151128]; *premier avion en métal* Junker J1 Blechesel [151212]; 'Chasseurs' initiate aggressive seek and destroy missions [160207]; French, German and British air services start bombardment of key facilities in early 1916; German production of Gotha bombers marks new type [160319-21]; supply flights into Kut [160415]; Nieuport 17 [160502]; meteorology [160505]; *La Fusée Le Prieur*: anti-balloon rockets [160522]; Sopwith Triplan [160528]; the German Albatros D.I. fighter, dominating to Autumn 1917, less successful in variants [160823]; on the refusal, by Douglas Haig, that larger bombardment aircraft be developed in air services; his advice retained by government determines a neat inferiority in this type compared to German Gothas [161003]; the *Halbersdadt*, with two machine-guns firing through the propeller, represents a threat to RFC engaged in Vimy observation; the use of F.E.2b and F.E. 2d 'pushers' to counter [170218]; the ascendancy of German aviation in «Bloody April» of 1917, where observation aircraft for the Nivelle offensive met superior German Albatros D.III fighters with better trained pilots [170425]; Gotha bombers have now overtaken Zeppelins as bombing platforms [170525]; reversal of «Bloody April» for the Allies with arrival of Bristol F.2 and S.E.5.; London bombed by flights of Gothas; worse yet [170613]; the Nieuport type 28; improved; later used by US pilots [170614]; United States Aircraft Production Board produces the design of the V-12 400 hp aircraft engine; prototype from Packard proves ground-braking technology [170729]; difference in tactics

between German 'circus' fighters and Allied front-line patrols [170830]; the case of the Curtiss JN-3 'Jenny' as a trainer and JN-4 'Canuck' as a later civilian version for Canada [170831]; the Sopwith Camel, «single most successful fighter aircraft in the history of the Royal Air Force» [170930]; first flight of prototype; interrupted bombing career of the Vickers Vimy; barely in production at the end of the war [171130]; record postal flight of Pierre-Georges Latécoère in «Salmson» from Toulouse to Casablanca [180327]; the Handley Page O/400 Bomber, with bomb load of 900 kg, biggest of Allies' bombers [180413]; the Fokker D.VII as best German fighter of the war [180426]; René Fonck, 75 confirmed victories in SPAD fighters [180509]; failure of German Gothas and Staaken bombers over London due to coordination of tracking and RAF fighter readiness [180518]; Handley Page bombers used as noise-makers to cover movement of transport in preparation for the battle of Amiens [180807]. * aircraft ac

Afghanistan. German draft of friendly treaty with Afghanistan meets 'masterly inactivity' by Afghan ruler Emir Habibullah Khan, under the watchful eye of the British Viceroy of India [160616].

Africa. See **Battles of/Africa**.

Aisne River. France. German retreat to [140913]; Joffre's December Plan to assault [141214]; *Plans de Joffre pour 'grignoter' en 1915; importance des chemins de fer; Aisne et Champagne* [150217].

Aitken, William Maxwell. See **Beaverbrook**

Albert, King of Belgium. Directing armies in withdrawal; refusal to abandon Antwerp [140811]; *repli de Anvers* [141001]; flooding [141028]; See **Battles of/Flanders** for operational information). 14 Oct 1918: Flanders front advancing into Belgium to reach Sheldt R. [181014];

Albert. Somme. [140927];

Alderson, Lgen E.A.H. British. (See **Canada/Government, /CEF**) Embarkation of first Canadian contingent [140923]; appointment, personality [140925]; on the line [150303]; Alderson's views on PPCLI being out of CEF [150320]; in Second Ypres [150430]; takes command of Canadian Corps [150913]; his meeting with Aitken in London; his troubles with Sam Hugues [160326]; Aitken meets Haig for replacement [160423];

Allenby, Gen Edmond British. (See also **Battles of/Somme, /Arras, /Middle East**) Commander Third Br Army. Somme [160225]; criticized on the battle of Arras [170415]; being sent to replace Murray in Egypt; PM asks him for 'Jerusalem at Christmas' [170601]; replaced by Byng [170609]; Lawrence's new mandate after Aqaba, as official British agent with King Hussein and Prince Faisal's Arab army; aims concerted with Allenby's EEF for Palestine flank protection toward Syria [170718]; Allenby takes Bersheeba; ANZAC cavalry key to success [171031]; British victory at Gaza [171107]; Jaffa taken, [171116]; Entering Jerusalem before Christmas [171211]; Smuts reports positively on Palestine Front; recommends pursuit to Constantinople in view of German negotiations in Brest Litovsk [180215]; Allenby on a roll, from Jaffa to Amman, then planning for Damascus [180226]; major troop transfer from EEF to France; delays ops against Amman; Indian troops take over [180525]; his masterpiece of deception: Megiddo [180919]; entering Damascus [181001]; Aleppo [181022];

Alsace. France. [140819];

Ancre River. First Somme [140927];

Anglo-Persian Oil Company: [140717]

Angus, Cpl William. VC winner at Givenchy-lès-La Bassée [150612];

Antwerp. (Fr. *Anvers*) Belgium. Threatened; King Albert's refusal to abandon [140811]; Siege [140929,1001]; Retreat [141009];

ANZAC – Australian and New Zealand Army Corps.

See **Australia and New Zealand**; for more on operations, see **Battles of/Gallipoli, /Dardanelles, /Middle East, /Flanders, /Somme, /Arras, /Kaiserschlacht, /Last Hundred Days.**

1915– ANZAC Corps formed in Egypt with recent addition of 2 Australian Div and NZ Div.; informed of task for Phase 2 at Dardanelles; Gen Birdwood [150220]; Casualties at Gallipoli [150511];

1916– Preparation to evacuate [151214]; IANZAC (1, 2, 3 Australian Divs and NZ Div) sent to Armentières, in Reserve Army, then sent to Somme for battle of Pozières; II Corps (4 and 5 Australian Divs and NZ division) in Flanders, sent to Armentières; 5 Div involved in Fromelles, heavy losses; withdrawn for one year; then II Corps (4 Div, NZ Div) sent to Somme [160719].

1917– Battle of Polygon Wood [170926]; Allenby takes Bersheeba; ANZAC cavalry key to success [171031].

1918– The defense of Villers-Bretonneux by ANZAC 5 Div; fierce battle where tanks meet tanks; last battle of revived op MICHAEL; pride of Australian war in France [180424]; the astonishing successes of the 33rd US National Guard Division in Vaux Wood and of Australian General John Monash (See **Monash**) in Hamel, showing skills in interarm cooperation and use of surprise with great effect [180705];

Ardennes. *Avance au combat; premières rencontres* [140819]; Lanzerac's Battle for survival [140822];

Armenians. Killing of [150317]; *Avertissements des Alliés contre les crimes commis* [150524]; Djemal Pasha, GOC Fourth Turkish Army; Cemal Pasha, Governor of Syria; decision with others on fate of Armenian refugees [150621];

Arras. France. See **Battles of/Arras.** *Repli de Anvers* [141001]; *batailles dans Lorette* [141217];

Artillery.

Guns: See **Krupp** and **Skoda.** *Big Berthas* in Liège [140807];

1915– British 'Big Gun Program' [150813]; Verdun; German '*Lang Max*' [151001];

1916– German trials on new artillery techniques for Verdun plan [160213]; the '*Big Berthas*' (420mm mortars) force Fort Vaux into

surrendering in Verdun [160607]; The French 75 - too light [160821]; **1917**– Innovation of French 155mm GPF with long barrel, outranging equivalent German guns, allowing counter-battery without riposte; use of 'mobile beaten zones' and 'rolling barrages' to protect infantry on the attack [170117]; on French development of very heavy artillery and the superiority in combat, shown by German developments, of the medium and medium-heavy guns for «the destruction of human material» [170705]; *Pariser Kanonen*: short stay in Champagne; various uses in the war [180716];

Shell development. (See **Shrapnell**) Munition production for Somme; problem of faulty fuses [160619]; Canadian Royal Commission on Shell Committee [160720]; a surge in quality control for British shell production [160922]; dealing with barbed wire: the No 106 Shell Fuse [170222];

Smoke. Used on battlefields to screen movement; first use of artillery smoke shells [151012];

Gas Use of toxic shells with gas in chemical warfare; German early start [150131]; Ypres; German preparation; false claims [150417]; Second battle of Ypres; chlorine gas used; Canadians hit by gas [150422]; further German gas attacks in Verdun region [151126]; Phosgene ('Green Cross') used in Verdun; more potent than chlorine gas [160620]; danger of gas blown back on attackers; an unsuccessful Canadian trench raid [170228];

Shell industry: artillery production in Canada end-1915 [151230]; The Canadian Shell Scandal [160327];

Tactics and techniques.

1915– Railway for artillery brought for Verdun offensive [151001].

1916– German trials on new artillery techniques for Verdun [160213]; The germ of the idea of artillery barrage [160416]; Developpement of the «barrage» technique; developpement of «box» technique to prevent troops from withdrawing [161215].

1917– On the 'Creeping barrage,' developed between Loos (1915) and Somme (15 Sep 1916), with artillerists Gen Sir Henry Horne, Mgen Alexander and Major Alan Brooke as major developers [170226,7]; the technique of Zero Hour [170305]; Col Lossberg's defence in depth in Flanders [170803]; the «laboratory battle» of Riga, where Bruchmüller developed immediate 'saturation' that became an integral part of Shock Troops tactics [170901]

1918– The Canadian experience of gunners on the advance in the period 4-10 Sep 1918 [180907];

Artois. France. *Première bataille d'Artois* [141001]; *Arras, Lorette et Vimy* [141217] [150321]; *visite à Foch de Poincaré et Millerand; espoirs exprimés* [150414];

Asquith, Herbert Henry: PM of Great Britain; The Henry-George negotiations [140726]; the Dardanelles decision [150224]; new government of coalition: Bonar Law (Cons.) agrees to Coalition under Asquith. Lloyd George goes to Munitions; Churchill out of Admiralty [150519,20,25]; the Somme decision [160407]; Parliamentary debate opens leadership debate; Bonal Law loses support of many Conservatives; his key role in the Liberal coalition is threatened [161108]; LG's recommendations for a three-man War Cabinet excluding Asquith [161202]; Aitken's role in the promotion of Conservative Leader Bonar Law to become kingmaker in the Second Liberal Coalition [161203]; Asquith toppled by LG; Second Liberal Coalition [161206];

Attrition. Waging of war in aim of causing casualties. Concept emerges in Verdun after unsuccessful initial assaults of 21 Feb to 9 Mar 1916, to go through Verdun toward Paris, German attitude changed to «bleeding France white». [160309];

Aylmer, Gen Fento J. British. Unsuccessful attempt to relieve Townshend force in Kut; heavy casualties in difficult progress along Tigris R. [160119];

AUSTRALIA [aus]

Army: For operations, see **ANZAC**

1914– Australian and NZ contingents re-directed toward Egypt, following declaration of *Jehad* in Turkey. Gen Birdwood

commands contingent; Mgen W.T Bridges, 1st Australian Div; 1st Light Horse Brigade (Brig H.G Chauvel) arrives in Egypt, 3 Dec 1914 [141203][150116];

1915– Two divs in Egypt; Gen Birdwood gives name ANZACS in Egypt; prepares for Gallipoli [150220]. ANZAC Beach landing [150425]; casualties [150511]; Sluvla Bay [150806]; preparation to evacuate; Suvla; all out with no casualties [151214,8,20];

1916– Gen Murray advances with Egyptian Expeditionary Force into the Sinai to control El Arish, prevent Ottoman incursions; Australian and New Zealand cavalry and brigade of camelry involved [161224];

1917– Bellecourt: an Australian victory in a sea of British reverses; spirit of the Dominions' soldiers, confident in their different style [170503]; Battle of Polygon Wood [170926]; Allenby takes Bersheeba; ANZAC cavalry key to success [171031];

Navy:

Ships:

•**Australia.** Battle cruiser [140921]; destroys *Emden* [141109];

AUSTRIA-HUNGARY.[ah] (See also **Germany/Government; Italy; Battles of/Galicia, /Last Hundred Days, /Limanova-Lepanov, /Poland, /Russian Front, /Salonika, /Serbia**)

Royalty: See Habsburg. Emperor Franz-Joseph dies on 21 Nov 1916 [161121]; replaced by Charles I (aka Karl I).

Government:

1914– Investigators to Serbia [140713]; Ultimatum to Serbia [140719]; Fr. *Ordre du Jour aux armées* [140723]; The George-Henry negotiations [140726]; Declaration of War to Serbia [140728]; defeat in Galicia [140918]; second defeat of three armies against Serbs; five armies in trouble in south Poland [141202]; terrible weakening; need for German support [141210];

1915– Launching of further ops in Carpathians [150222]; Italy declares war against Austria-Hungary [150525];

1916– The secret peace initiative to France by Prince Sixtus of Bourbon-Parma [161205]; Bethmann Hollweg's Peace Offer: an attempt to divide Allies of the Entente [161212];

1917– As governments respond to Wilson's request for their war aims, it becomes more evident that complete victory or defeat are the only possible outcome; no point of conciliation can be found [170110]; Wilson's famous speech to the Nations at War remembered for «Peace Without Victory»; exhorting halt in hostilities and diplomatic negotiations on equal footing [170122]; «Turnip Winter» is the worse of the war for food shortages and suffering due to deep cold [170125]; FM Czernin's statement reaffirming Austro-Hungarian allegiance to Germany; end of secret overtures to Allies; consequences on Habsburg dynasty [170221]; end of secret Bourbon Palma mission to France; no possible agreement [170306]; meeting of Bourbon-Palma and British PM in Paris; Karl of Austria informed of the refusal by Italy, at the conference of Saint-Jean Maurienne, for any term of armistice [170420]; notorious Austrian Thalerhof camp for ethnic suspects, mostly Ukrainians of Galicia and Bukovina, suspected of Russian connections [170510]; latest attempt at secret contacts with French government meets stern refusal by new PM Ribot; Italians hold key to Allied agreement; they want Tyrol to even consider [170512]; in early July 1917, Wilson decrees an embargo on all 'neutral' exports going out of US for countries neighboring Germany; wants each to justify needs for food [170709]; in Germany Bethmann Hollweg replaced by Michaelis with no experience in foreign affairs [170714]; The Corfu Declaration (*Déclaration de Corfou*): Serbs in exile in Corfu sign a Declaration with representatives of Croatia, Slovenia and Austro-Hungarian Serbs, promising a union of southern Slavs after the war; their 'Yugoslav' committee will lead to a recognized Realm, at Paris, to later be called Yugoslavia [170720]; China declares war to Germany and Austria-Hungary

[170814]; Lenin's «Decree of Peace»; his decision to seek armistice; the army is disbanded and chaos is spreading; the Russians are out of the war! [171126]; «They voted for peace with their feet» – The 15 Dec 1917 Armistice between Russia and the Quadruple Alliance (Germany, Austria-Hungaria, Turkey and Bulgaria); a three-month truce to negotiate a treaty of peace [171215]; Smuts sent to Geneva to meet Count von Mendorff-Pouilly-Dietrichstein to discuss Austrian overtures for peace; the result is a confirmation that AH is bound to Germany to the end [171219];

1918– Wilson's «Fourteen Points» Speech: the death sentence of two empires [180108]; in Brest Litovsk, Ukraine agrees to become 'exclusive protectorate' for Germany in exchange for sham 'independence and sovereignty'; Germany is carving Russia into a rump, one province at a time [180209]; Wilhelm and Karl discuss prospects of war [180222]; Trotsky compelled to sign the Treaty of Brest Litovsk; enormous spoils to the winners [180303]; Conference of Spa: revelations that Austria-Hungary has been involved in secret dealings with Allies; Emperor Karl humiliated [180512]; (See **Battles of/Last Hundred Days**): On 4 October, 1918, Germany and Austria send diplomatic notes to Pres. Wilson to ask to arbitrate negotiations for armistice on lines of 14-Point principles; German government tries to impress with improvised democratic measures to be seen as change from policy; Great Britain and France immediately oppose private arrangements between Germany and USA [181004];

Austro-Hungarian Army: (See **Italy; Battles of/Galicia, /Last Hundred Days, /Limanova-Lepanov, /Poland, /Russian Front, /Salonika, /Serbia**)

1914– Austro-Hungarian retreat in Carpathians, 50,000 prisoners; Russians threatening Budapest from Cracow, German Silesia [141129].

1915– Launching of further ops in Carpathians [150222]; large German advances over Dvinsk, Kovno, Vilna, Grodno, Brest Litovsk and Tarnopov [150826]; FM Mackensen commands 'Quadruple Alliance,' Balkans Front, to retake Serbia and re-establish Constantinople railway; Third Austro-Hungarian Army under command [150930]

1916– Offensive in Trentino, southern Tyrol [160515]; the obvious effect of the Brusilov offensives of June 1916 on the Italian front; Asiago Plateau [160615]; full extent of Brusilov victories [160625,8]; Eighth battle of Isonzo; 25,000 casualties on each side [161010].

1917– The naval battle of the strait of Otrante [170515]; the Tenth Battle of the Isonzo lasts five weeks and again, ends in stalemate [170608]; special reinforcements and chemical experts sent to Italy for upcoming Caporetto [170918]; Caporetto: German-Austrian-Hungarian operation with reinforcements has tremendous success with horrific loss of Italian personnel; 265,000 captured with 3,000 guns [171024]; Italian retreat to Tagliamento and Piave rivers [171026].

1918– An offensive on the Piave against reinforced Italian defences will prove a ten-day failure; 15,000 soldiers will be lost, destroying Austrian hopes on that front [180615]; Spanish Flu; starts in the summer of 1918 with a first wave of severe symptoms that necessitate hospitalization; soldiers are hard-hit; the second wave of 1919 will kill some fifty million people across the world [180801]; Foreign Affairs ministers at Versailles tell Wilson that he must consult before any initiative taken in regard to armistice; his views do not correspond to those of nations involved in the war since the start [181009];

Austro-Hungarian Navy:

Subs: Von Trapp sinks French *Léo Gambetta* [150421];

B

Baden, Maximilian, Prince of. Second cousin, 'royalist liberal,' appointed by Kaiser as Chancellor of Germany on 3 Oct 1918, to negotiate

armistice of Central Powers with Allies of the Entente [181003];

Baghdad. Chief Ottoman city of Mesopotamia; [150413]; Townshend's progression to Kut-al-Amara and orders to take B. [150928]; See **Battles of Mesopotamia**

Baku: Caspian Sea. Centre of oil production. Enver Paşa's intent in conquering [141206];

Balfour, Arthur. Conservative former PM of GB. Replaces Churchill at Admiralty; on the challenge of defending against Zeppelins [150810]; advancing considerate nuances on the «... to a knock Out» speech by LG, does not sway cabinet [161004]; named Foreign Secretary in Lloyd George's coalition; head of delegation to United States to discuss association in war; accompanied by multiple experts [170422]; The Balfour Declaration; delivered as encouragement to Jewish community, taken by Zionists as sacred promise [171102]; Balfour on the need for British to keep in good terms with Russian leadership even after armistice with Central Powers [171210];

Balkans. First Balkan War (1912) [140713]; Bulgaria's alliance with Germany [150906,16-7]; the role of Salonica to maintain neutrality [160514]; Sarraïl's attempt to reach and hold Monastir so as to establish communications with Adriatic coast and keep Bulgarian busy in Serbia; away from Romanians; lack of transport in mountainous ground [160911]; The battle of Monastir Gap: the surge of Serbian troops through mountain gaps to attack Bulgars in Serbia and prevent them from reinforcing against Romania [160930]; Greece joins the Entente [170612];

Baltic Sea, [140629]

Barbed wire. Dealing with bared wire: the No 106 Shell Fuse [170222]; 2,000 tons per month [180515];

Barbot, Gén. E.J. Well-known French figure involved in Arras's defence and offensive operations, will die at Cabaret Rouge [141227];

Barker, William. Canadian flying ace. Start in Mounted Rifles as skilled machine-gunner [150910]; flies the Sopwith Camel, «single most successful fighter aircraft in the history of the Royal Air Force» which will bear him 46 of 50 victories [170930];

Basra. City at head of Persian Gulf. Port of Shett-al-Arab, oil outlet [150413];

BATTLES OF:

Africa.

1915– Rebellion in South-Africa, 1914 [see **South-Africa, Union of**] Defeat of German-South-West Africa by British South-Africa (Gen Botha) [150709]; German Kamerun; Mount Mora; Cunliffe vs von Raben [150907]; British naval victory over German *Kingani* in Lake Tanganyika [151226].

1916– Final British victory in German West Africa colony of Kamerun; Bgen Macpherson Dobell [160101];

1917– Gen Smuts' campaigns of 1916 against all German protectorates of Africa [170429]; German Gen Lettow-Vorbeck, hero of African guerilla pushed to SE Tanganyika [170429]; operations in East Africa between German and British Imperial forces; Von Lettow's guerilla undermines Gen Deventer and Gen Bieves columns pursuing him [170810]; Battle of Negomano; Gen von Lettow–Vorbeck pushed out of Tanganyika by superior British forces, crosses Rovuma R into Portuguese Mozambique where he raids Negomano, chasing the garrison out [171128]; Portugal brought into Allied cooperation in Mozambique: the De Castro - Deventer meeting [180129];

Alsace et Lorraine: . *Batailles*; Map [140819]; *Erreurs* [140820]; Arras. France.

1914– First Battle of Arras; part of the First Battle of Artois (see **Battles of/Artois-Champagne**) [141001] and Race to the Sea (see **Battles of/Race to the Sea**); *Plan de Decembre de Joffre, offensive dans Artois et Lorette* [141217];

1915– (See **France/Armée**) Plan for summer 1915; Artois-Champagne [150504];

1917: Second Battle of Arras (aka Battle of the Scarpe): British part of the Nivelle offensive of April 1917 (See **Battles of/Chemin des Dames; Nivelle**); Vimy is included on the left of this operation (See **Battles of/Vimy**). Haig has been forced to

take part in a large-front operation led by Gen Nivelle; British Cabinet decided after the Rome Conference of Jan 1917 that it would participate in this op; Robertson's and Haig's reluctance and criticism of Nivelle's plans [170115,0307]; the Haig-Nivelle feud on status of British group of armies involved in Battle of Arras [170313]; scorched earth in the German retreat to the Hindenburg Line [170314]; the British advance of three armies (eight corps) in front of Arras is successful on the first day, including at Vimy [170409]; Newfoundland Regiment in Monchy-le-Preux [170414]; Allenby criticized [170415]; failure on the French side [170421]; First and Third Army resume advance [170423]; Fresnoy and Bellecourt: Canadian and Australian victories in a sea of British reverses; spirit of the Dominions' soldiers, confident in their different style [170503];

Artois and Champagne. France. *Première bataille d'Artois* [141001]; Arras [141217]; Plans for summer 1915 for Artois-Champagne [150504]; Simultaneous British and French attacks in areas of Arras, Vimy, 9-15 May; Aubers Ridge [150509]; Canadians at Festubert [150523,30]; rest for Canadians [150531]. Joffre's front-wide campaign of Artois-Champagne for Fall 1915; Joffre's and Kitchener's failures [150923,7,1013];

Charleroi. France. Lanzerac's Battle for survival [140822];

Chemin des Dames (aka Third Battle of Champagne or Second Battle of the Aisne.) (See **Nivelle**)

1917– French portion of the Nivelle front-wide operation of Apr 1917. Takes part in Champagne, between Reims and Soissons, toward the Aisnes R.. All out massive push by the French is to be preceded by a British operation in Arras region (See **Battles of/Arras – Second Battle of Arras**). On how FM Haig does not like Nivelle's plan and is intent on getting back to Flanders as soon as it is over [170307,13]; scorched earth in the German retreat to the Hindenburg Line [170314]; Nivelle has to face criticism for his stance, continuing "as if nothing happened" after the retreat of the Germans of up to 20 miles on a 100-mile front; his French army group commanders and Haig want the op cancelled; French Assembly gets involved in forcing Nivelle to change his plan; his offer of resignation on 18 March [170318]; the Nivelle affair erupts in French Assemblée and the Briand government is toppled; new government formed by Ribot; Painlevé becomes Minister of War; difficulties in sustaining Nivelle as CinC [170319]; the new circumstances of the three German armies behind the Hindenburg Line [170320]; first day of attack on 60-km wide front by three armies (1.2 million men); Germans did not move their reserves north; terrible killing of attackers [170416]; Nivelle's abysmal failure: 120,000 casualties in 6 days and breakdown of French morale [170421,4]; (see **Casualties**);

Coronel. Naval battle W of S. America. [141101]; (See **Spee, Cradock**).

Dardanelles.

1914– Turkey. British campaign in Dardanelles: *Fermeture du Déroit* [140926]; bombardment of entrance forts [141103]; bombardment of Sedd-el-Bahr and Kum Kale [141212]; British sub enters [141213];

1915– Churchill re-directing troops from France for 'sideshow' [150129]; opening of naval fire in Dardanelles on forts in Sedd-el-Bahr, Cape Helles and Kumkale [150219]; decision to send land forces to Gallipoli; Lemnos as a staging base [150223]; Royal Marines land in Gallipoli with limited success; naval bombardment proves ineffective [150227]; Venezelos offers troops when Dardanelles forts are bombarded; imbroglio with Russia [150304]; entrance of RN, raid blocked [150319]; ships lost in the raid [150319]; De Robeck's decision for the Dardanelles fleet to renounce the attempt to cross the Strait [150323]; Churchill agrees with land campaign in Gallipoli [150325]; German subs hit Fleet severely [150530]; submarine net in the Dardanelles [150725]; first aerial torpedoing of ship [150812]; Hankey's Dardanelles report; Hamilton doomed [150827]; Effects of Bulgaria's treaty with Triple Alliance;

Greece's double position with Salonica [150924]; the Orient Railway as crucial artery of German materiel [151008]; Keyes' attempt to renew naval crossing; Kitchener's trip; Bonar Law's objection to continuance; Monro's alternate plan at Alexandretta [151101,07-9]; Cabinet abandonment of op confirms complete failure; Churchill's resignation [151121]; The Alexandretta Scenario [151123];

1916 – Evacuation [151214,8,27][160107]; ; Parliamentary Enquiries launched into Mesopotamia and Dardanelles operations; Foreign Secretary Grey's objections to commissions in time of crisis [160707,0904]; Lord Cromer ready with his enquiries into Mesopotamia and Dardanelles campaigns [170215];

Falklands. (See **Great Britain/Government; Churchill; Spee**) British ships despatched in haste to Falklands; get there in time to counter an attack by Adm von Spee [141207]; Spee's squadron destroyed 7-8 Dec 1914, incl. *Scharnhorst, Gneisenau, Leipsig*; *Dresden* escapes [150314];

Flanders. France and Belgium. Lasted for whole war. (See **Great Britain/Government, /BEF; Albert; Belgium; Falkenhayn, French, Haig**)

1914– Took importance as a focus of Race to the Sea (See **Battles/Race to the Sea**). Withdrawal of Belgian forces and Falkenhayn's campaign of fall 1914. **First Battle of Ypres**, (Oct-Dec 1914): first battle 15 Oct-15 Nov [141015]; Yser River: battle starts; Rupprecht and Bessler [141018] *fusiliers marins à Dixmude* [141024]; Langemark [141025]; Falkenhayn's last battle [141111];

1915– **Second Battle of Ypres**: Canadians positioned in Second British Army, Mar 1915: chlorine gas used; Canadians hit by gas [150422]; map [150423]; Saint-Julien [150424]; loss of Hill 60; fighting in Langemark, Pilkern, Keerselaere, Gravenstafel, Fortuin, Broodseinde, Zonnebeke, Polygone Wood, Frezenberg; map [150505]; **Battle of Neuve Chapelle** (March 1915); British attack involving Canadians; First Div Op Order for March 9, 1915 [150309]; Canadian Baptism of Fire [150309-12]; Gen French pushed back; refuses to withdraw [150516]

1917– **Battle of Messines.** Gen Plumer's Second Army faces Fourth German Army in sector of Messines-Wytschaete. On June 7, half a kiloton of explosive in subterranean galleries make 10,000 German casualties; the follow-on attack with tanks and massed artillery gains three kilometers [170607]; Haig's plans for an all out offensive in Flanders immediately after the battle of Arras; LG's objections; Foch's 'duck march' remark [170617]; **Third Battle of Ypres** (31 Jul-10 Nov 1917): Haig's Flanders' attack to begin; organization of armies; mass of artillery involved in preliminary churning of mud; infantry assault planned for 25 July postponed to 31st [170730]; **Battle of Pilckem.** Start of the campaign for Third Ypres: battle of Pilckem; rain and mud and little progress [170731]; Col Lossberg's defence in depth in Flanders [170803]; little enthusiasm in London conference for Haig's push in Flanders [170806]; amphibious portion cancelled; the mud as a determinant of success [170807]; **Battle of Hill 70:** The Canadian diversion of Lens: first day of the battle for Hill 70: 1 Div and 2 Div attack [170815]; Canadian success; Ludendorff's visit to Lens [170818] (See Canada/CEF); 44Bn in the battle of the Green Crassier; casualties [170823]; **Battle of Langemark.** Fifth Army (Gough) diving toward Passchendaele. Follows as a second attempt after the battle of Pilckem; also hampered by rain and mud [170816]; **Battle of Passchendaele.** The drive started on 31 July has not diminished in aim; to the hill of Passchendaele-Wytschaete. From Aug 20, Second Army takes over from Fifth. Gen Plumer, a conscientious detailist, will now head the assault toward the height of Passchendaele-Wytschaete immediately in front of him; the battle is turning, as in the Somme, into a contest of mutual annihilation [170820]; Haig's optimistic defence of the operation before Cabinet [170821];

Plumer makes the mistake of letting nice days be dedicated to preparations; he launches in the renewed rain in Flanders [170912]; the battle of Menin Road: Plumer's one-day success [170920]; Haig orders another go to Plumer on 4 October; rain is on the side of defenders [171004-5]; Haig wants more attacks on 9 and 12 Oct so that front line are not in water during winter [171007]; the battle of Poelcapelle, the 'saddest day of the war'; rain is cruel; 20,000 casualties [171009]; Currie tasked with Passchendaele; expects 16,000 casualties; believes his corps is not recuperated from the battle of Lens; will do it [171013]; Currie goes from First to Second army for the Corps task at Passchendaele; memories of Saint-Julien, two and a half years ago [171015]; preparatory work for Passchendaele [171017]; Canadian Corps relieves II ANZAC as spearhead of Second Army [171022]; morning attack in Passchendaele [171025]; at the foot of the Passchendaele hill [171027,1108]; Rawlinson temporarily replaces Plumer at Second Army while in Italy; [171108]; Passchendaele: last day of the Third Battle of Ypres [171110];

Frontiers. Entry of German forces into French territory [140803]; (See **France/Government, /Army; Germany/Government, Army; Great Britain/Government, /BEF; Belgium; Joffre**). Belgian Left Flank [140810]; Namur [140818]; *Premiers signes de déséquilibre dans les armées allemandes du nord* [140820];

Galicja. Poland and Ukraine, 24 Aug-18 Sep 1914; Lambert; Krakow, Vistula [140918]; (See **Battles of/Warsaw; Russia/Government, /Army; Germany/Government, /Army; Poland; Ukraine;**)

Gallipoli. (See **Battles of/Dardanelles; Great Britain/Government; ANZAC; Australia; New Zealand; Turkey**)

1915– Land part of operations in Dardanelles. First landing by British Royal Marines with limited success [150227]; Hamilton, named Cmdr of Gallipoli land force [150313]; Von Sanders prepares defence after Allied forts bombardment and naval raids have failed [150326]; map of landing beaches [150425]; landing at ANZAC Beach [150425]; battle of Krithia; very heavy casualties [150428,0511,0604]; story of 'Duffy' [150521]; truce [150522,4]; Gully Spur; casualties [150628,0704]; landing of Sluvs Bay; Sari Bair Ridge [150806]; Stopford's mistake [150807]; Feisi Pasha, Turkish commander in Sluvs Bay action, fired by Sanders, replaced in extremis by glorious Kemal [150809]; successive defeats to Allies; casualties; Hamilton asking for 95,000 more men [150825]; forces sent as reinforcements to Salonica [151003]; Hamilton recalled; Monro appointed [151015,7]; preparation to evacuate [151214]; Suvla evacuated [151214,8,27];

1916– Full evacuation; stats on Allied casualties [160108-8];

Guise. France. Fifth French Army at Guise [140829];

Gunbinnen. (See **Russia**) Russia-Prussia Front. Eighth German Army defeats two Russian armies [140824];

Italian Front. (See **Italy and Austria-Hungary**).

Jadar. (See **Battles of/Serbia**) Jadar River valley, Serbia; Serbs defend against Austro-Hungarian invasion [140813];

Jutland. Naval battle on 31st May and 1st June 1916 where German High Seas Fleet tests the British Cruiser Fleet and Grand Fleet in the North Sea. Greatest naval battle of modern times. Description [160531-0601]; the Germans inflicted more damage than the British did, despite much larger numbers of vessels in the British two fleets, but the strategic victory of this battle will become more obvious as it is realized that the German High Seas Fleet will never come again out of the Baltic ports to confront its enemy in mass. It will have been neutralized until the end of the war, when it will be scuttled, rather than be surrendered by the terms of the armistice. [160601];

Kaiserschlacht — covering final operational efforts of both sides, in France, for 1918, until the **Battles of/Last Hundred Days (4 Aug 1918)**.

1918– Start of **Op MICHAEL (21 Mar-5 Apr 1918)** toward Arras and St Quentin, in Picardie; Seventeenth and Second

German armies with 32 divisions attack in *Sturmabteilung* against Byng's Third Br Army and Gough's Fifth Br Army; 'A Storm of Troopers' [180321]; Second Day: Fifth Br Army's retreat; entire battle zone is lost before Second Ge Army; Seventeenth Ge Army (Von Bulow) meets resistance from Third Br Army withdrawing from Cambrai Salient; [180322]; Third Day: critical situation in Fifth Br Army; fear of disjunction with Sixth Fr Army; German divisions pushing to separate and exploit breach; Pétain reluctantly loans nine divisions to Haig [180323]; Day Four: Second Ge Army forces Fifth Br Army further back; critical need of reserves; Third Br Army withdraws but does not break; German momentum diminishes; artillery cannot follow advance; front blanketed with gas; tired German soldiers stop for delights of rich French stores [180324]; bombardment of Paris with *Paris Kannonen* [180325]; in haste Foch appointed 'coordinator' for the Front (see **Foch**) [180326]; 1 Brigade of Canadian Motor Machine Gun sent to help Fifth Br Army retreat near Amiens [180328]; the cavalry charge of the Canadian Flowerdew Squadron (LdSH) [180331]; Fifth Br Army (Gough) taken out of the line, broken; able divisions switched to Fourth Br Army; new divisions brought in from other British armies; Rawlinson recalled to take command of reorganizing Fourth Br Army; imperative defence of Amiens, transport knob [180402]; at the conference of Beauvais, Foch named in authority to conduct overall control of operations in France in the name of Supreme War Council; national Commanders-in-Chief Pétain, Haig and Pershing, to follow his plans [180403]; End of Op MICHAEL; German assault did not reach Amiens or Arras; divided in its progress, and did not carry its artillery forward enough [180405]; Foch refusal to commit strategic reserves to Haig imploring for them [180407]; **Op GEORGETTE (9-19 Apr)** Ludendorff attempts to force Foch to move his reserves in the vicinity Armentières-Canal du Nord, hitting British armies in the north with Sixth Ge Army; Foch does not move; the German attack is swallowed, not without Haig issuing his desperate « our backs to the wall » message urging troops to not withdraw; [180409]; meeting of Abbeville; Foch confirmed as «*Général en chef des armées*»; his full authority in not releasing his reserves until timing is perfect [180414]; Second Br Army (Plumer) has been pushed back out of many precious sites of past battles, but his quick withdrawal confuses German assault troops who extend their lines of communications too far too fast [180416]; halt of op GEORGETTE [180419]; **SEICHEPREY (20 Apr)**: surprise attack by German 26 Div hit American Expeditionary Force (AEF) near St.Mihiel, to gain upper hand; Americans recover village of Seisheprey with six times more casualties (600); Doughboys not deterred the least [180420]; Ludendorff now involved in preparing Op BLÜCHER, a second battle of the Marne that aims, again, at a powerful drive toward Paris; the secrecy in preparation of this large operation is outstanding [180423]; the defense of **Villers-Bretonneux** by ANZAC 5 Div; last revival of op MICHAEL [180424]; revival of Op GEORGETTE at Mount Kemmel does not lead to success [180425]; in view that the British have lost 300,000 men to 70,000 French men in the *Kaiserschlacht*, Foch grants that Tenth Fr Army be sent as Reserve to British aid; it goes north between Doullens and Saint-Pol-sur-Ternoise; divisions from Pétain's force are also shifted north [180427]; end of GEORGETTE; Foch's reinforcements seal the defence in Flanders; Ludendorff disillusioned with hopes of out-foxing Foch; only hope now is BLÜCHER in one month; [180429]; the Summit of Abbeville: Foch given additional responsibilities as overall commander of whole Western Front, including Italy; Versailles planning staff transferred to his HQ; Pershing agrees on priority to transport of troops over materiel [180502]; *un printemps de 41 jours de combats se solde en près de 700,000 pertes, 17,000 par jour!* [180505]; US troops pouring into AEF; 140,000 new infantry in one month; .65 million total end-May 1918 [180513]; On 20 May 1918, Foch senses that the Germans are overextended and vulnerable; he orders advances in all armies of the Allied Front

in France, with priorities around Amiens and Béthune [180520]; realignment of British armies [180523]; **Op BLÜCHER (27 May-)** Another Battle of the Marne; Ludendorff crosses Aisne R., with three armies (First, Seventh, Eighteenth) going toward Paris in Champagne; complete surprise; massive artillery; Sixth Fr Army (Duchêne) not defending in depth; rapid progression, German hope to bring Allied reserves back south for later strike against British [180527]; Foch orders AEF to counter-attack with three divisions at Cantigny; «Sammies» resist German counter-attack and hold Cantigny; great moral booster for Allies to see AEF act with limited but obvious success [180528-9]; Tenth Fr Army (Mangin) launched as Front Reserve to counter German advance behind Sixth Fr Army [180529]; blocking positions at Villers-Cotterêts and Chateau-Therry [180601]; the American battle of Belleau Wood; terrible casualties due to inexperience; superb determination by US Marines despite 5,700 casualties [180606]; Haig-Foch argument over Haig's control of British divisions in Strategic Reserve; Foch is adamant: he cannot have them! [180607]; Foch's advantage of being able to read encrypted German messages from June 2nd, 1918; this has a definite operational effect seven days later [180609]; numbers of German prisoners indicative of demoralization [180611]; **Op GNEISENAU** launched as a diversion to BLÜCHER, at Noyon and Montdidier, is met by strong defences that squarely block its advance; this is a first occasion in 1918 when defence is so effective on the Allied side against a two-army op [180612]; Ludendorff caught by logistical quandary: his need to seize Reims for the railroad junctions forces him to commit his Front reserves to Champagne; his plan to force the move of Allied reserves to Champagne is not working; his plan to attack in Flanders against Hazebrouk cannot work if Foch's reserves do not move away; his leg appears to be in a trap [180618]; Foch on increased reserves for July and timing as the key factor [180629]; the astonishing successes of the 33rd US National Guard Division in Vaux Wood and of Australian General John Monash in Hamel, showing skills in interarm cooperation and use of surprise with great effect [180705]; **Battle of Friedensturm (15 Jul)** (Offensive for Peace): Propaganda name to a fifth offensive; major battle of the *Kaiserschlacht* campaign started on 21 March; both prongs of this 3-army attack meet very strong resistance by four French armies, with US and British participation, and are stopped rapidly; the Allied counter attack from Bois de Cotterêt, with 19 divisions (3 are US) in Tenth Fr and Sixth Fr armies, inflict severe material and psychological damage on the German armies, which have to adopt a defence posture [180718]; Ludendorff undergoes a personal crisis that witnesses see as the first real sign of defeat; any hope of Op HAGEN, that he is planning for the north, is ruined by the results of the previous day, in which his *Friedensturm* offensive was violently stopped and rammed on the SW side [180718]; Foch moves his reserve divisions so as to protect both Pétain and Haig, who now expects an attack [180720]; German divisions earmarked for HAGEN in the north are now sent as reinforcement in the south [180721]; the German line in Champagne is reinstated at Fère-en-Tardenois to Ville-en-Tardenois after a withdrawal [180723]; from the conference in his HQ, at Melun, on 24 July, Foch reverses the tactics to an Allied offensive with hits at various places so as to outpace tired German reserves [180724]; the meeting of Sarcus, where Pétain instigates the **Battle of Amiens**, where he wants Haig to command Fourth Br Army (Rawlinson) and Tenth Fr Army (Debeney) to clear Amiens and regain the Amiens-Paris railway, pushing toward Roye; Haig decides immediately that he wants the Canadian Corps to be moved from the First Army in Artois for the operation [180726]; German armies in Champagne pushed further back to Soissons-Fère-en-Tardenois-Reims; «Second Battle of the Marne» is being won; Foch wants a punch elsewhere (Amiens) to throw Germans off balance [180727]; the tandem of Canadians and Australians side by side being set for 8 Aug [180728]; The French armies have now

pushed the German armies in Champagne to the line where they started the advance in Champagne; Pétain has now won the Second Battle of the Marne; not less important than the first one; from now on, the Germans will withdraw constantly until the end of the war; April 4 marks the beginning of the Last Hundred Days [180802];

Le Cateau. France (See **Battles of/Frontiers, /Race to the Sea**) [140930];

Limanova-Lapanov. Eastern Front; Austro-Hungarian defence of Cracow [141211];

Lodz. Mackensen army surrounded [14123];

Loos. (See **Great Britain/BEF, Germany/Army, and Canada/CEF**). British counterpart in Artois to French campaign in Champagne, Sep 1915; «*grignotage*»; Joffre's and Kitchener's failures [150923,7];

Mansurian Lakes. Follows victory of Tannenberg; annihilation of Tenth Ru Army by Eighth and Tenth Ge Armies in First and Second battles [150213];

Marne, France. (See **France/Army; Germany/Army; Great Britain/BEF**) Still unexpected; *circonstances qui préparent* [140820]; *franchir la Marne* [140901] [140903]; Battle of the Marne (5-11 Sep 1914); description [140905,7,9,11];

Mesopotamia.

1915– Battle at Kurna, near Basra. [150412-3]; Gen Nixon sends Gen Coringe up Karun R. and Townshend up Tigris R. to take Amara to protect oil assets [150419]; Amara taken; Chamberlain wants to pursue to Kut [150603]; capture of Kut-al-Amara by Townshend [150928]; the advance to Ctesiphon by 6 Ind Div [151119]; Battle won by Ottoman Colonel Nureddin [151122]; FM Von der Goltz establishes a siege against Townshend's 6 Ind Div in Kut [151225];

1916– MGen Lake becomes commander of Mesopotamia theatre replacing Nixon. Tasked to raise siege of Kut and free Townshend's Indian troops surrounded there [160110]; unsuccessful attempt by Gen Aylmer to relieve Townshend force in Kut; heavy casualties in difficult progress [160119]; Dr Sinton's VC [160121]; new command arrangements with Imperial Military Council in London for Indian divisions in Mesopotamia [160216]; Aylmer replaced by Goringe as commander of Tigris column; arrival of 13 Br Div to free weakened 6 Ind Div in next attempt at Kut siege [160402]; supply flights into Kut [160415]; Gen Goltz dies in Baghdad [160420]; surrender of Kut: besieged garrison of 13,000; staggering losses among POWs [160430]; Parliamentary Enquiries launched into Mesopotamia and Dardanelles operations [160707]; Gen Maude ready to start against Baghdad after having rebuilt the British-Indian force; now under British control [161213];

1917– Maude progressing at a slithering crawl up the Tigris [170212]; Lord Cromer ready with his enquiries into Mesopotamia and Dardanelles campaign [170215]; Gen Maude's force enters Baghdad! - future plans for Caucasus [170311]; Maude captures key Ottoman Samarra railway [170427]; Falkenhayn sent to Constantinople to assess the possibility of retaking Baghdad; his plan for Op Lightning with joint Turkish-German Asia Corps; he sees retaining Palestine as critical factor [170507]; Royal commission releases report; severe blame against leadership, British, Indian, civilian and military, and particularly, scandalous management of medical services in the operation [170703]; resignation of Secretary for India, Austen Chamberlain [170713]; Mgen Dunsterville: the 'Dunsterforce': *des Voyageurs canadiens en Mesopotamie*; expedition of mobile special operations force to Caspian Sea [180107,27]; Ottomans at Baku [180826]; Ottomans take Baku; cannot keep it [180915];

Last Hundred Days. Period of 4 August to 11 November 1918, all Fronts. [Day 100] Preparations for the **Battle of Amiens**. (This battle is called *Bataille de Montdidier* by the French) [Day 99] Canadian Corps moves secretly from Artois to Amiens

by back roads; leaving First Br Army to join Fourth Br Army; issues in Fourth Br Army with secrecy for transport and logistics; aircraft traffic used to cover noise of transport [180805]; [Day 98] Foch named *Maréchal de France* [180806]; [Day 97] the use of RAF to create deception plans for the battle of Amiens; Handley Page bombers used as noise-makers to cover movement of transport in preparation for the battle of Amiens; overall air assets [180807]; [Day 96]: «*Der Schwartze Tag*»; the Battle of Amiens on 8 August 1918: description of the battle; its effects on First Day: the effect on German morale; recovering crucial railroad Amiens-Paris [180808]; [Day 95]: the Second Day: «*Sans perdre une minute*»; Foch pushing five armies in convergence to make sure that the Germans do not get to solidify a defence line in their withdrawal; aiming for the line Roye-Chaulnes; Soissons taken; going for River Aisnes, Reims, Laon, St.Quentin [180809]; [Day 93]: Fourth day: momentum lost; Haig and Currie convince Foch that the advance should stop; Canadian Corp to return north; Pétain now to strike elsewhere [180811]; [Day 92]: Conference at Flizécourt; new strategy after agreement to stop in battle of Amiens; Fourth Br and First Fr armies to hit at a different angle [180812]; [Day 91]; German High Command conference of Spa; the stabbing not in the back; morale deeply shaken [180813]; [Day 90]: Haig postpones intervention of Fourth Br Army; Foch then orders Pétain to create army group with First, Third and Tenth Fr Armies and advance nevertheless, so as to keep Germans unbalanced; a French MM for Haig [180814]; [Day 86]: Gen Mangin, «*le Forgeron*» *frappe le fer quand il est chaud*; Tenth Fr Army's mean General keeps on fighting to the Oise R. [180818]; [Day 85]: A Plan for the British: succession of army attacks from S. to N: Fourth Br Army toward Péronne and Hindenburg Line; Third Br Army toward Cambrai and Hindenburg Line; First Br Army (Canadians leading) toward Drocourt-Quéant Swith Line to round the Hindenburg Line by the N. and take from behind to help Third and Fourth Br armies [180819]; [Day 84] : a nightmare assignment for Gen Byng at Third Br Army; to redo the Somme offensive in days [180820]; [Day 83]: the Battle of Albert (21-31 Aug); a new impetus of youth and morale in Third Br Army [180821]; [Day 82]: Canadian Corps preparing for an advance on the Scarpe R.; looking ahead to Canal du Nord and Drocourt-Quéant [180822]; [Day 81]: Third and Fourth Br armies progressing well in the Somme battlefields [180823]; [Day 77]: the withdrawal of the German armies under the push of the Allied whole Front offensive; trying to draw a line of defence [180827]; [Day 76]: Foch's battering hammers on three anvils: Cambrai; St.Quentin and Mézières; to each in turn [180828]; [Day 75]: Germans withdraw from Flanders to re-assign divisions; Ypres battlefields abandoned altogether; superb victory! due to action to the south [180829]; [Day 73]: Pershing refuses Foch's suggestion of strategy; wants to remain at St.Mihiel where his divisions are learning the ropes; Australians at St.Quentin [180831]; [Day 72]: the Hindenburg system of lines [180901]; [Day 71]: Canadians in the **battle of Droncourt-Quéant**; hitting the Germans where it hurts; a network of railroads at nexus of their front-line supply system falls in Allied hands; Hindenburg Line can be rounded by the N Third Br, Fourth Br, Fifth Fr and First US armies converging on Hindenburg Line [180902]; [Day 70]: *Tout le monde à la bataille*: a giant is on the move; coordination of logistics for the advance on the whole front of N to S armies [180903]; [Day 67]: the immense US railroad naval guns used in the advance of Allied armies to destroy infrastructure [180906]; [Day 65]: Foch gives orders so that the Belgium Army gets going ahead; new Army HQ staff attached to support King Albert [180908]; [Day 64]: Ludendorff at Spa: no words to describe the losses: his aim: establish a defence line [180909]; [Day 62]: Currie and the planning of the **Battle of Canal du Nord** [180911]; [Day 61]: The Americans at St.Mihiel: Pershing

commands three corps composed of six US and five Fr divisions, a quarter million men, with abundant artillery, tanks, and air support; he will take the salient in three days, with 14,500 prisoners and 443 guns; he will then be shifted by Foch to the Argonne region, where he will fit into the larger Front as the southerlymost army [180912,7]; **[Day 59]**: Salonica: general offensive; General Franchet d'Esperey launches a powerful attack with multinational force up the Vadar Valley with great success; Central Powers taken by surprise and while vulnerable; Serbs are driving forward to liberate their country [180914]; **[Day 57]**: the imbalance in power between Allies and Germans; the enormity of Allied increase in materiel power [180916]; **[Day 55]**: Allied successes at Havrincourt and Epéhy; nearing Cambrai, St. Quentin and Mézières, in a methodical advance of enormous power [180918]; **[Day 54]**: Middle East: The battle of Megiddo; Allenby's masterpiece; brilliant use of deception [180919]; Currie's preparation; warned by senior generals for the crucial Battle of Canal du Nord [180921-2]; Foch's plan for next four days are irresistible: 26-29 Sep [180923]; **[Day 49]**: Salonica: Franchet d'Esperey's advance in the Balkans; cutting the Central Power's underbelly right open; last charge of French cavalry at Usküb [180924-5]; **[Day 47]**: the enormous size of the American First Army moving into Argonne [180926]; **[Day 46]** **The Crossing of Canal du Nord; the greatest Canadian battle of the FWW;** successes in other armies [180927]; **[Day 45]**: The Third Battle of Malmaison: recovery of important feature of *Chemin des Dames*; Laon is next [180928]; **[Day 44]**: taking of the Bellicour Tunnel; Fourth Br Army on the advance [180929]; **[Day 43]**: German High Command decide that they are beaten; inform Foreign Minister von Hintze that he must now start diplomatic initiatives to protect the German Army and keep as much as possible of the conquered territories; posturing begins [180930]; **[Day 40]**: Allenby enters Damascus; the vulnerability of Constantinople, taken from Middle East and from Salonica; discussions on post-war division of Ottoman spoils [181001]; **[Day 41]**: the enormous successes of the last week along the Hindenburg Line, now punctured in many places; German High Command broken; exertions and exhaustions of the advancing Allied armies in France [181002]; **[Day 40]**: handover of German reins of power to civilian government; new Chancellor appointed by Wilhelm II, second cousin Maximilian, Prince of Baden, tasked to negotiate in terms of President Wilson's «Four Principles to End the War», ensuring that the Hohenzollern dynasty remains on the throne [181003]; **[Day 39]**: Germany and Austria send diplomatic notes to Pres. Wilson to ask to arbitrate negotiations for armistice on lines of 14-Point principles; German government tries to impress with improvised democratic measures to be seen as change from War policy; Great Britain and France immediately oppose private arrangements between Germany and USA [181004]; **[Day 38]**: Foch pushing relentlessly in the pursuit of retreating enemy; becomes ugly in his scolding of national C-in-Cs, King Albert, Haig, Pétain and Pershing; [181005]; [181006]; Byng and Currie again as a team [181006]; **[Day 36]**: end of the Young Turks's regime in Constantinople [181007]; **[Day 35]**: Foch reacts to Pres Wilson's indications that he would like to be mediator for an armistice; in the military committee of the Supreme War Council, he makes it clear that the military authorities of the allies will have to be involved in ensuring that the Central Powers, if they want an armistice, will have to relinquish the arms that make them capable of renewing war; this includes land, sea and air material of war [181008]; **[Day 34]**: three Foreign Affairs ministers at Versailles tell Wilson that he must consult before any initiative taken in regard to armistice; his views do not correspond to those of nations involved in the war since the start [181009]; **[Day 33]**: recent sinking by U-Boats of merchant vessels jeopardize the Central Powers' negotiations for peace; German Navy ordered to stop sinking merchant vessels [181010]; **[Day 32]**: Canadian Corps

crossing the Canal de l'Escaut; end of a long series of successful but deeply hurting battles [181011]; **[Day 31]**: the end of the Wilson option for armistice mediation [181012-3]; first intimation of Victory! [181013]; **[Day 30]**: new government in Turkey; conveys wish to end war [181013]; **[Day 29]**: Flanders front advancing into Belgium to reach Sheldt R. [181014]; **[Day 28]**: Middle East: Allenby's forces take Homs; nearing Constantinople; urge of the German government to cease hostilities before too much territory is lost [181015]; **[Day 27]**: Wilson's change of heart; now makes clear that armistice will impose disarmament; peace negotiations will be separate process [181016]; **[Day 26]**: pursuit becomes a race; Germans rushing to rear line; Allies' efforts to keep up [181017]; **[Day 25]**: how Foch's determination to give no chance for regrouping to the German is in fact deeply felt in the German armies; **[Day 24]**: Foch does not want German armies to take refuge of winter [181018-9]; **[Day 23]**: evidence in France of German *assassinat industriel*; destruction of infrastructures in their retreat [181020]; last angry gasp of the German Navy: Adm Sheer intent to drive the High Seas Fleet out of ports [181021]; **[Day 21]**: Middle East: EEF in Aleppo: Final Gallop [181022]; **[Day 20]**: Wilson's refusal to deal with military masters and monarchical autocrats; [181023]; **[Day 24]**: final defeat of Austro-Hungarian armies in Italy: from Monte Groppo to Vittorio Veneto [181024]; **[Day 18]**: the Canadian battles of Mont Houy and Valenciennes: future textbook operations [181025]; **[Day 17]**: Exit Ludendorff: leaving with his pretensions in his bag [181026]; **[Day 16]**: the last patrol of Canadian Captain William Baker [181027]; **[Day 15]**: David Lloyd George's triumph: the sideshow's importance; Middle East and Salonica prove the demise of Central Power cohesion [181028]; **[Day 14]**: Southern Slavs separate from Austria-Hungary; demise of an empire [181029]; an armistice signed on board *Agamemnon* marks the end of the Ottoman Empire [181030]; **[Day 12]**: Dual empire dissolve [181031]; **[Day 11]**: Currie fighting with as few casualties as possible at Mount Houy [181101]; **[Day 02]**: Serbs back home in Serbia [181102]; **[Day 9]**: Italians in Trieste [181103]; **[Day 8]**: Supreme War Council: all agree on one thing: Unconditional; the foresight of David Lloyd George and General Ferdinand Foch [181104]; Wilson's Fourth Note to Germany: you have to deal with Foch [181105]; **[Day 6]**: German proletariat hits the streets: Karl Liebknecht of the Spartacus faction; fear of Russian-sponsored revolution [181106]; **[Day 5]**: Foreign Minister of Germany agrees: Germany will participate to armistice talks with General Foch [181107]; **[Day 4]**: a first meeting at Rethondes to hear the Allies' requirements [181108]; **[Day 3]**: Germany: Kaiser Wilhelm abdicates [181109]; **[Day 2]**: a message from Berlin to Rethondes [181110]; **[Day 1]**: signing on the bottom line; End of the War; Foch's message to all armies [181111]; :

Middle East.

1915– Ottoman Syria governor Cemal Pasha facing Arab revolts [150203]; Cairo Bureau contact with Damascus Arab Al-Faroki; Lawrence involved in shaping British pro-Arab policy and establishing contacts with Sharif Hussein in Hejaz [151010]; London policy decision for Cairo Bureau to approach Sharif of Mecca for talks on association with Arab malcontents [151019]; **1916**– The Sykes-Picot agreement [160104,0202]; the Cambon-Grey Agreement based on the Sykes-Picot agreement [160516]; Sharif of Mecca King Hussein opens hostilities against Ottomans with Arab attack on Red Sea port of Jeddah; 4000 Bedouins, British ships and airplanes involved [160610]; the Muslim question; public opinion and British Indian officialdom on Arab in Middle East revolt against Constantinople Calif, splitting Muslims against Muslims [160627]; **1917**– The Ottoman troops have attempted strikes from Medina, but British gunboats and aircraft from the Red Sea have countered their sorties; Prince Faisal has been able to conduct

Arab operations to take Yenbo, Wejh and threaten the Medina road; Turks abandon Medina [170118]; Arab Revolt involved in blowing up Ottoman railroads in Hijaz; Lawrence involved [170325]; Falkenhayn in Constantinople; new plans to address reverses in Hejad and Mesopotamia [170507]; Allenby being sent to replace Murray in Egypt; PM asks him for 'Jerusalem at Christmas' [170601]; Lawrence's new mandate after Aqaba, as official British agent with King Hussein and Prince Faisal's Arab Army; aims concerted with Allenby's EEF for Palestine flank protection toward Syria [170718]; *le cadeau de Noël de Allenby sera bien enveloppé* [170923]; the Meinertzhagen trick [171010]; Allenby takes Bersheeba; ANZAC cavalry key to success [171031]; British victory at Gaza [171107]; Jaffa taken; crossing the Jaffa Gate [171116]; Allenby entering Jerusalem before Christmas [171211].

1918– Arab Army involved in the defence of Talifeh show cohesion that makes Lawrence satisfied with progress [180123]; formation of two wings of the Arab Revolt army: a conventionally organized Northern Arab Army under the command of Djafer Pasha, advised by a British officer, and the light camel cavalry wing, where Lawrence remains; the two wings operate in different ways but coordinate their movements for the next objective: the city of Maan [180203]; Smuts reports positively on Palestine Front; recommends pursuance to Constantinople in view of German negotiations in Brest Litovsk [180215]; Allenby on a roll, from Jaffa to Amman, then planning for Damascus [180226]; the battles of Amman and Mann show the needed coordination between the British EEF and the Arab Army; two reverses bring a good lesson [180411]; major troop transfer from EEF to France; delays ops against Amman; Indian troops take over [180525]; Meeting of Faisal and Weizmann [180604]; Ottomans at Baku weaken Middle East Turks [180826]; a feud between King Hussein, Prince Faisal and Syrian tribal commanders; Lawrence's intervention to doctor a letter to get the show on the road again; glimpses of post-war divisions [180904]; the battle of Megiddo; Allenby's masterpiece; brilliant use of deception [180919]; Allenby enters Damascus; the vulnerability of Constantinople, taken from Middle east and from Salonica; discussions on post-war division of Ottoman spoils [1809]; Aleppo [181022];

Mons. From Mons to Le Cateau [140829];

Poland. Warsaw. Przemysl [141019]; See **Austria-Hungary and Russia.** Ops in Carpathians. The Gorlice-Tarnow Breakthrough [150622]; Battle of Galicia [150622]; Russian retreat of summer 1915 [150703]; Lublin and Cholm fall to German hands in the East [150801]; Fall of Warsaw [150805]; large German advances over Dvinsk, Kovno, Vilna, Grodno, Brest Litovsk and Tamopov [150826];

Race to the Sea. Northern France (17 Sep-17 Nov 1914) [140910,4,27]; (See **France, Great Britain, Germany**). End of Race to the Sea [141119];

Russian Front. (See **Russia, Austria-Hungary, Germany**) for respective operations.

Salonica. (*Thessalonica*)

1915– Allied Front in Greece to support Balkans against Austro-Hungarian penetration; divided opinion on importance as a 'sideshow' [150209]; Joffre forced to send four divisions as he is in middle of Artois-Champagne, they won't go in the end [150830]; *conférence de Calais*; *Joffre et le renfort pour Salonica* [150911]; new importance of Salonica after Bulgaria's Treaty with Triple Alliance; important Allied preparations never made [150906,16-7]; Large reinforcements from Gallipoli arrive. Imbroglio with Greece; Serbia isolated; Serbia being crushed [151004-8-9,11,22]; *role de Briand pour préserver la Serbie* [151204];

1916– Sarraill under Joffre [160111]; difficult role for 'sideshow' during Verdun [160514]; Serbian army reconstituted at Salonica, ready to go [160712]; British-Romanian negotiations to obtain that the Salonica army prevent the Bulgarians from being a threat to Romanians; the France-first reply from Lloyd George

[160802]; Falkenhayn attempts to manage many theatres; Romania is slipping away [160809]; Sarraill cannot protect Romanians from Bulgars from Salonica [160810]; the battle of Florina; Bulgarians take Florina to occupy a dominating position on the Struma R.; Serb Army in Salonica cannot do much to oppose; Mackensen poised to invade Romania on word [160817]; Sarraill's attempt to reach and hold Monastir so as to establish communications with Adriatic coast and keep Bulgarian busy in Serbia; lack of transport in mountainous ground [160911]; the battle of Monastir Gap; the surge of Serbian troops through mountain gaps to attack Bulgars in Serbia and prevent them from reinforcing against Romania [160930]; relative success of the battle of Monastir; Bulgarians in Serbia prevented from acting against Romania; not much difference in the end [161119]; taking of Monastir; rupture of the Venizelists becomes an acute division in Greece society after the return of the Serbs to Monastir; Sarraill behind the Serbian return to Serbia [161209];

1917– Sarraill at the Rome Conference: told not to over-publicize the Greek participation to the Salonica Force; American Greek public not happy with schism created by Venizelos' hurry to get into the war [170107]; Salonica exposed to terrific campaign of USW in the Mediterranean, losing supply ships in great numbers; political opposition to keeping the force meets French government radical insistence on keeping on account of Greece's position; British PM wants results to compensate contribution [170419]; King Constantine I of Greece, threatened by the Allies in Salonica to push into Greece, abdicates in favor of his second son Alexander; Venizelos returns to Greece, now formally allied with the Entente [170612]; *le Général Guillaumat remplace le Général Sarraill* [171223];

1918– The Treaty of Bucharest: Romania falls under Central Powers' control [180508]; Greeks beat Bulgarians W of Vardar R.; movement of Central Powers' troops and materiel to France leaves Bulgarian occupation forces in Serbia weak; with arrival of Americans in France, Salonica front becomes an option for a success story [180530]; See general offensive of 14 Sep in **Battles of/One Hundred Days** [180914]; last charge of French cavalry at Usküb [180924];

Serbia. (See **Serbia; Austria-Hungary; Battles of/Salonica, /Last Hundred Days**). Invasion of Serbia by Austro-Hungarian armies in 1914; multiple reverses; retreat of Serbian armies and refugees through Montenegro (1915-16); Serbian armies in Salonica (1817); offensive of the Serbian armies from Salonica to Serbia (1918).

Somme.

1915– Conferences of Chantilly and London [151205,28], **1916**– Meeting of Haig-Joffre to discuss 1916 strategy [160113]; agreement on the areas of responsibilities for French and British forces, S and N or river Somme [160214]; Haig orders 100 Mark I tanks [160217]; arrival of first of Kitchener's armies; sent to Rawlinson's Fourth Army for Somme; training [160303]; French High Command diminishes commitment to Somme offensive due to surprise in Verdun [160312]; *installations d'infrastructures, routes, rail et stations, hôpitaux, aqueducs, en préparation pour 400,000 hommes et 100,000 chevaux* [160331]; Asquith's authorization of the Somme offensive [160407]; Haig and Rawlinson differ on approach to offensive [160413]; Gen Maurice's information about the French reduction in the Somme plan [160519]; construction of the Liven flame projector [160524]; Joffre and Haig agree on 1st July [160527]; Conference of Amiens; Foch and Haig split the task [160530]; the network of railroads created for the Somme offensive [160608]; Rawlinson's plan for Fourth Br Army for the Somme; obvious influence by Haig in cavalry tasks [160614]; Munition production; problem of faulty fuses [160619]; Intelligence predictors of failure and incoherence of Haig's plan [160622]; 24 June 1916 –«U-Days»: first day of six days of preparatory artillery of unprecedented volume known to Germans as 'Drumfire' [160624]; «X-Day» – fourth day of

preliminary bombardments; relief felt in Verdun [160626-7]; **First day of the Battle of the Somme**; Fourth Br Army and Fr *Sixième Armée* (Fayolle) cross the Start Line along the Front.; seven days of very heavy artillery preparations have not prevented German defences from stopping the assaulting forces in the No Man's land with terrible casualties, in particular on the British side, which counts 40,000 men lost in first day. [160701]; Joffre-Haig conversations; British must close the gap as French troops are well forward; comparison in tactics [160703]; British troops in Kitchener's armies are not trained adequately; Fayolle's difficult position [160709]; 80,000 British casualties in 10 days [160710]; battles of S of Albert-Bapaume road: La Boisselle, Mametz, Contalmaison, Ovillers, Bernafay Wood, Trônes Wood [160713]; the melting cavalry charges of Longueval, High Wood [160714]; the South African brigade at Devil Wood [160715]; BEF CofS Charteris' optimistic evaluation of Somme so far [160718]; 5 Australian Div's diversion at Fromelles [160719]; the advance to Pozières; six British divisions involved in night attack [160721]; 120,000 casualties in 21 days [160721]; night attacks on High Wood; Wood Lane, Intermediate Trench, and Guillemont; prove impossible due to German criss-cross MG fire and wire [160723]; Fourth Army's 1 Aus Div relieved by Reserve Army's 2 Aus Div in Pozières; high casualties [160727]; Foch, with army commanders Fayolle (Fr Sixth) and Michelet (Fr Tenth) pushes for Haig to advance fast [160729]; the challenges of the second half of July: the proper tactics past the top of the hill [160730]; four armies working at it: Fourth Br Army (Rawlinson) and Reserve Army (Gough), and Sixth Fr Army (Fayolle) and Tenth Fr Army (Michelet) [160731]; 12,000 losses for Australians, half of their infantry [1608]; ten British, three Australian, one South African brigade, and an Indian cavalry brigade have been exhausted in recent operations; three divisions of Canadian Corps being called up from First Army to Reserve Army; fourth division arriving in France for training; attrition calls [160811-2]; last Australian Division (4 Div) exhausting at Fouquet Farm; the aim to round Thiepval [160814]; Second Canadian Division working up the Reserve toward Somme [160824]; half-million casualties in 60 days in Somme (200,000 Brit; 200,000 German and 70,000 French) [160830]; taking of Ginchy by 16 Irish Div [160909]; 1 Cdn Div at Mouquet Farm on 3 Sep; relieved by 2 Cdn Div; planning for Flers Courcelette; facing 45 Ge Div, Guard Reserve Corps [160903,8,12]; **Flers Courcelette**: Four-army advance on crest of Somme theatre; on left, Fifth Army, 2 Cdn Div at Courcelette; Rawlinson's Fourth Br Army on right; French armies far-right at Combles; tanks used for first time; largest British advance so far [160915]; blunder in the employment of tanks [160920]; battles of Morval (French army) and Thiepval (Fifth Br Army) at extreme ends of Flets-Courcelette advance rely on 'bite and hold' approach [160925]; Canadian railroad troops brought from Canada; British takeover of French railway system in BEF area [160927,1023]; battle of the Thiepval ridge; Cdn Corps and II Br Corps advancing from the East, facing hard-faced defences such as SCHWABEN, STUFF, ZOLLERN, HESSIAN, SUDBURY, KENORA AND REGINA. [160929]; Canadians poised for REGINA TRENCH; rain [161001]; 104 days after Beaumont Hamel, the Newfoundland regiment is in battle in the Somme at Gueudecourt [161012]; Canadian Corps (three Divisions) comes out of the Somme on Oct 8; 18,000 casualties in five weeks; 4 Cdn Div enters with British corps on 13 Oct 1916 to similar fate [161013]; SCHWABEN REDOUBT falls; Mounds of Thiepval gained at last [161014]; Secretary for War Lloyd George confronts Robertson on Haig's strategy; calls for memo on prospects [1610]; the final act at Beaumont Hamel; Third battle of the Ancre; 51 Highland Division [161113]; the last fighting in the Somme; Gough's drastic measures in the Third Battle of the Ancre, rotating divisions into fire [161113,8];

Siberia: (See governments of **Great Britain, United States, Canada**). Allies get organized [180920];

Stalluponen: Russia. First German-Russian battle [140817]; **Tannenberg**. German great victory of Eighth Army over Russians [140830] [150213];

Verdun. (See also **France/Government, Army; Joffre; Nivelle; Pétain; Verdun**) Gen Herr, commander of fortress and Colonel Driant, MP, complain that 'fortified' region of Verdun is inadequately prepared for war. Joffre's answer; improvements [160206]; German trials on new artillery techniques for Verdun plan [160213]; Joffre in Verdun [160219]; first German attacks; three French divisions mauled in Bois d'Haumont [160223]; PM Briand [160224]; Joffre's message to the troops in Verdun and appointment of Pétain to direct Second Army to defend on right side of the Meuse R. [160226]; German attacks with flamethrowers [160228]; *batailles simultanées de Mort-homme et Douaumont* [160307]; French High Command diminishes commitment to Somme offensive due to surprise in Verdun [160312]; Kitchener and Robertson involved in convincing Haig that relief must be provided for Verdun in form of diversionary attack [160328]; motor lifeline: la *Voir Sacrée* [160408]; *perte de Mort-homme; impatiences à Paris; Pétain: Courage! on les aura!* [160409-11]; Pétain to Central Army Group, feeding French armies into Verdun; Nivelle at Second Army; Prince William of Prussia and Gen Knobelsdorf at odds [160503]; stats on formations and personnel rotating within furnace and how many lost [160507]; explosion in Douaumont [160508]; Gen Mangin's division against Fort Douaumont [160517]; «Big Berthas» force surrender of Fort Vaux [160607]; the battle for Fleury [160623]; effects of the Somme opening on Verdun; Falkenhayn's shifting weight to the north to counter [160626,0711]; the Hour about to Strike (Pétain) [161005]; recapture of Fort Douaumont with railway guns and Gen Mangin's Corps; symbolic victory [161024]; Nivelle has retaken all ground lost by the French since Feb 21, 1916 [161102]; *dernière attaque à Verdun où les Français reprennent tout le théâtre des combats de la dernière année; maîtrise de techniques d'artillerie; 11,000 prisonniers, 115 canons pris; 700,000 pertes françaises en tout* [161215]; *une nouvelle opérations à Verdun assurée de succès pour remonter le moral* [170826];

Vimy.

1914—*Offensives françaises* [141217].

1915—Neuville-Saint-Vaast [150619].

1916—French *Dixième Armée* positions handed over to British on account of Verdun; British are pushed back by early German assault W of ridge [160321]; *les Allemands grignotent à leur tour* [160521].

1917—LGen Byng informed that Cdn Corps would be involved in Vimy operation in spring with another British Corps [170120]; Currie back from Verdun with his report finished on improvements on the offence; learns of the Corps assignment to op at Vimy from Byng [170123]; Orders for the deployment of the whole Corps at Vimy [170202]; FM Haig at Vimy [170214]; Nivelle's visits [170216]; *préparations pour le tir indirect des mitrailleuses de Brutinel* [170217]; the *Halbersdadt*, with two machine-guns firing through the propeller, represent a threat to RFC engaged in Vimy observation; the use of F.E.2b and F.E. 2d 'pushers' to counter [170218]; on the artillery support to be provided by First Army; Horne and Brooke [170226-7]; Canadian emphasis on training [170310]; Beginning of two-week preliminary bombardment [170321]; the «Week of Suffering»; second week of preliminary bombardment on Vimy Ridge [170331]; the British advance of three armies (eight corps) in front of Arras is successful on the first day, including at Vimy [170409]; Canadian overnight battle for Hill 145 (4 Cdn Div) [170410]; the Canadian medical evacuation system [170412]; the Pimple and advance to the line OPPY-MÉRICOURT-AVION until 13 Apr [170413]; Battle of Arras continues; Canadians move on to Arleux-en-Gohelle and Fresnoy [170423];

(End of **Battles of**)

=====

Beatty, Adm. Cmdr of Cruiser Fleet [141008];

BELGIUM. [bel]Fr. *Belgique*.

1914– Issue of Belgium in Pre-War negotiations; Treaty of 1839 [140802]; King of Belgium in Pre-War diplomacy [140802]; refuses entry to German forces [140803]; violation of border is trip-wire for British Declaration of War [140804]; Resistance [140806]; King Albert directing armies [140811]; *Viol de la Belgique* [140825]; German II and III Reserve Corps in siege of Antwerp [140929]; *Anvers, gouvernement change d'idée* [141002]; repli de Anvers [141001]; *gouvernement recule vers Ostend; 40,000 réfugiés; Escaut* [141007]; at line NIUPORT-FURNES-DIXMUDE [141013]; Defence along Yser R.; floodings [141026]; Food problem in Belgium; Commission of Relief [141028]

1915– Second battle of Ypres; chlorine gas used; Canadians hit by gas [150422]; secret contacts with Belgium rep to discuss eventual association [151129].

1916– University of Ghent reopened by German authorities with secret motives [161021]; in the flurry of offers of peace initiatives, von den Lancken's policy paper outlining to the Kaiser's government that, as Tirpitz had made clear earlier, «Belgium remains the kernel of Germany's war aim policy in the west.» [150508][161210];

1917– In early July 1917, Wilson decrees an embargo on all 'neutral' exports going out of US for countries neighboring Germany; wants each to justify needs for food [170709];

1918– Pilot Edmond Thieffry's daring flights; shot down; POW. [180228];

Bachmann, Adm. German. Chief of Naval Staff, resigns with interruption of USW [150920];

Beaverbrook, Lord (from Dec 1916), **William Maxwell 'Max' Aitken.** Canadian businessman from New Brunswick who moved to London before WW1; as official government «Canadian Eyewitness», was instrumental in arranging for London contacts and offices on behalf of Canadian government;

1915 – In Feb 1915, obtains permission from British War Office to have reporters in theatre of operations in France [150202]; introducing a new kind of reporting from the Ypres battlefield [150501];

1916 – His book *Canada in Flanders* a bestseller and propaganda tool [160102,0429]; carries Sam Hugues' demand to War Office for more staff and command qualifications for senior Canadian officers [160106]; his meeting with Gen Alderson in London; informed of Alderson's troubles with Hugues [160326]; Hugues sends to meet Haig to replace Alderson [160423]; succeeds in obtaining CEF War Records, getting Canadian official photographers into war theatre; becoming propagandist for British Government through friendship with Canadian-born Colonial Secretary Bonar Law [160429]; creation of the very successful Canadian Cinematography Company that will break new ground on level of authenticity in war reporting [160726]; huge success of films in 1916 [160812]; British Parliamentary debate opens leadership debate; Bonal Law loses support of many Conservatives; his key role in the Asquith coalition is threatened [161108]; Aitken's role in the promotion of Conservative Leader Bonal Law to become kingmaker in the Second Liberal Coalition [161203]; Asquith toppled by LG; Second Liberal Coalition [161206]; Aitken knighted for influence in shaping Second British Liberal Coalition; chooses the name Beaverbrook for Knighthood; acquires *Daily Express* [161218]; The Beaverbrook-Rothermere War Artist program [161228]; very successful publication of the series of books *Canada in Khaki*, sold in UK even more than in Canada [170111]; Gen Charteris (BEF Int) on the pros and cons of 'Press Lords' Beaverbrook and Northcliffe distributing information and propaganda in America with mixed results on Canadian recruitment and American opinion [170403]; Thomas-Louis Tremblay on Beaverbrook's newspaper criticism of French Canadian anti-conscriptionism and the 'Vandoos' reputation [171127]; Beaverbrook becomes Minister of Information in British Cabinet [180210];

Belgrade: First bombardment [140729]; defense [140813];

Benedict XV: Roman Catholic Pope. Message of impartiality and desire for peace [150731];

Bent, Lcol Eric, VC. Canadian in British Army. Died leading Leicestershire Regiment at Polygon wood, 1st October, 1917 [171001];

Berchtold, Von. Fr. *Ministre des Affaires étrangères de Autriche-Hongrie* [140707]; Writes Ultimatum to Serbia [140719];

Bessler, Gen Von. German Commander; *spécialiste ingénieur à Anvers* [141002];

Berlin. [140712];

Bethmann Hollweg, Theobald Von. Chancellor of Germany; *Mitteuropa*; September Program [140928]; statement of war aims after Italians declare war [150527]; fate of Poland [151111]; differences between Falkenhayn and Bethmann on USW [151211]; severe division of views in German High Command on USW; Kaiser decides that Chancellor has three months to sort out diplomatic solution; Tirpitz resigns on postponement [160306]; replaced by Von Capelle, more amenable to Bethmann Hollweg [160313]; on the search for a 'Third Way' with the United States on USW using Presidential election [160506]; Chancellor Bethmann Hollweg's memorandum on Germany's war aims; has to deal with Hindenburg who does not agree with much of the view expressed [161114]; Bethmann Hollweg's Peace Offer: an attempt to divide Allies of the Entente [161212]; marginalized in the military dictatorship, incapable to prevent USW, close to resigning [170201]; resigns over vote franchise in Prussia; replaced by Michaelis [170714];

Beyers, Gen C.F. South Africa. Leader of rebellion [141124];

Bielorrussia. Germans banging the table at Brest Litovsk: Central Powers go back on the offensive and invade parts of Russia, almost without opposition; Baltic countries are carved out of the Russian sphere [180218];

Birdwood, General Sir William. British officer of Indian army assigned to command Australian and New Zealand contingent (ANZAC). [141203][150116]; gives name to ANZACS in Egypt; prepares for Gallipoli [150220]; Rawlinson to Supreme War Council, replacing Wilson; Birdwood temporarily replaces at Fourth Army [180223];

*birdwood

Birkett, Lcol Herbert Stanley. Dean of Faculty of Medicine, Mc Gill University. Founder of No 3 Canadian General Hospital (McGill) [150109];

Bishop, «Billy». Nieuport 17 [160502]; outstanding success on 8 Mar 1917 [170308]; Bishop's lone patrol of June 2nd, 1917, earning him a VC [170602]; with S.E. 5 [170610];

Bismarck. Chancellor of Germany, XIXth C. [140803]; [141210];

Black Hand ('Narodna Odbrana'). Secret Revolutionary union of Serb nationalists, also known as «Unification or Death» [140713]; Ultimatum [140723];

Black Sea. *Breslau.* and *Goeben* cross Bosphorus into Black Sea, threatening Sebastopol and Odessa [141027]; Op as Turkish *Janus* and *Midilli* in Black Sea [141103];

Bonar Law, Andrew. British Conservative leader; agrees to Asquith (Lib.) coalition; Colonial Office [150519]; his position against Kitchener's endorsement of Joffre's autumn offensives in Artois and Champagne [150915]; Parliamentary debate opens leadership debate; Bonal Law loses support of many Conservatives; his key role in the Asquith coalition is threatened [161108]; Aitken's role in the promotion of Bonal Law to become kingmaker in the Second Liberal Coalition [161203]; Asquith toppled by LG; Second Liberal Coalition [161206]; on his support for Lloyd George's dictatorship in acquiescing to the Nivelle operation [170304]; in PM's War Policy Committee [170619];

Borden, Sir Robert. Prime Minister of Canada [140801]; See for more: **Canada/Government.** Borden announces that Canada will raise 500,000 men for armed services [151231]; the difficult relations with Minister Sam Hugues on the question of Gen Alderson's command [160423]; Canadian Royal Commission on Shell Committee [160720]; Borden gives an ultimatum to Hugues that he is to conform to Cabinet exigencies [161106]; Sam Hugues resigns; under criticism, Borden publishes the damning correspondence between PM and minister; public opinion favors Borden [161111]; End of year report on recruitment; fall in recruitment; Borden blames French Canadians; truth is that British-born men are all gone, Canadians as a whole are

much less interested [161231]; Borden invited to the Imperial Conference of 1917 [170208]; in France visiting with troops [170309]; Borden in Imperial Conference of Mar 1917; the pull of Imperial War Cabinet; his refusal [170316]; at Imperial Conference Apr 1917, makes historical statements for Dominions; Resolution IX [170426]; Borden back from Imperial Conference introduces a *Military Service Bill*; the conscription debate is open [170518]; Meeting Borden-Laurier: Laurier refuses to be part of a coalition government and wishes to oppose Conscription in a referendum election [170529]; On second reading of the *Military Service Bill*, Laurier takes the stand that he will fight the passing of the law by demanding that a referendum election be held before any decision taken; all now know that it will not pass smoothly [170618]; speech by Minister Kemp in Parliament on the needs for recruitment and policy options within compulsory service [170625]; *Military Service Bill* passed in House of Commons, to become law on 29 August 1917; Laurier wants general election [170724]; Borden ends Parliament; he goes to general elections Dec 17, 1917, with three main instruments: *The Military Service Act*; the *War-time Elections Act* and the *Soldiers Voters Act* [171006]; his giveaway to farmers in view of elections [171202]; Borden in London is informed by Currie on what is needed from the Imperial Conference; this is instrumental in the creation of Imperial Cabinet sub-committee for Dominions to express views [180613-4]; The Siberia Affair: Borden incensed that the British Government sends a request for troops through Colonial Secretary and Governor General, when himself and Minister of Militia are in London; stalls on answer until amends are made [180712]; at Imperial War Cabinet in London, agrees that former President of Provisional Government of Russia, Kerensky, should be supported in his struggles against the Bolshevik government and the Central Powers's forces attempting to diminish Russia; he agrees in principle to two Allied operations, one in Vladivostok and one in Archangelsk [180725];

Botha, Gen Louis. PM South Africa. Rebellion [141124];

Boulogne. France. Arrival of BEF [140816]; Channel Ports [140929]; No 2 Stationary Hospital arrives in Boulogne [141108]; *Conférence sur munitions* [150619];

Bourassa, Henri. *Éditeur du Devoir de Montréal. Politicien opposé à l'impérialisme européen et à la conscription canadienne* [150115]; the Ontario Regulation 17 Affair [150912][160510]; ; publishes *Que devons-nous à l'Angleterre?* [151216]; six weekly lectures on *Hier, aujourd'hui et demain*, on constitutional history; clear statement of his position of Canadian isolationism and secularism [160305]; letter to Bourassa from Captain Talbot Papineau at the Front; published in *Le Devoir*; exhortation to join [160728]; *Le Devoir* becomes the tool to oppose the *Military Service Act* which is being considered for compulsory service; the Conscription Debate will rage [170528]; his article in *New York Times* justifying his stance against Canadian conscription [170710];

Bourbon-Parma, Prince Sextus of. French citizen in Belgian Army parent with Habsburg of Vienna; used as secret negotiator with France to open secret negotiations on behalf of Emperor Karl of Austria-Hungary; various missions do not end in any results. (See **Austria-Hungary/Government**). Final veto by Italy on any Entente concession to Austria-Hungary [170420];

Bremerhaven. Kiev Kanal

Breslau: Chase in Mediterranean; renamed *Midilli* [140810];

Brest Litovsk. Fortress city in contention on Eastern Front; taken by Germans [150901];

Briand, Aristide. France. *Chef du Cabinet* after Viviani. (See **France/Government**)

Bridges, Gen Sir William T. Commander of Australians in ANZAC. Dies at Gallipoli [150518]

Brooke, Maj Alan. British artillery officer attached to Canadian Corps. His brilliance and influence [170217];

Bruges. Belgium. Retreat [141009];

Brussels. Belgium. Fr. *Bruxelles; progression allemande* [140818]; [140820];

Bruchmüller, Gen Georg. Germany. Expert artillerist, initiator of new techniques with high efficiency, often imitated by Allies. The «laboratory battle» of Riga, where Bruchmüller developed immediate 'saturation' that became an integral part of Shock Troops tactics

[170901]; Ludendorff brings Bruchmüller from the East for the Spring Offensive [180217]; his secret preparations of Op BLÜCHER (27 May 1918) [180527]; .

Brusilov, Gen. Russia. *Aux portes de l'Allemagne* [141120]; Failure at Lake Narotch paralyzes Russian armies for months [160329]; appointed commander of SW Front; prepares to recover from terrible recent losses with manoeuvre instead of mass artillery, as in Narotch blunder [160404]; achieves surprise with new methods, forces Austro-Hungarians and Germans to send reinforcements away from France and Italy toward Galicia where Russian progress is remarkable [160604]; full extent of success and loss of steam; Southern AG not being flanked by Northern AG on account of German defences [160628]; by mid-September, Brusilov has made 450,000 POWs, but he has lost 1 million men to casualties and 1 million to desertions; he can no longer make significant gains; the fight is out of the Russian soldiers [160921];

Brutinel, Raymond. Creator and leader of the Canadian Motor Machine Gun [140924]; Salisbury Plains; Kitchener's views [141023]; Creation of British Machine-Gun Corps [151021]; creation of brigade MG companies [160330]; *préparations à Vimy pour le tir indirect des mitrailleuses; école spéciale pour former des mitrailleurs canadiens* [170217];

Bulgaria. King Ferdinand I. Between Tsar Nicholas and Kaiser Wilhelm [150723]; Treaty with Germany; consequences to Allies [150906,16-7]; mobilisation 'armed neutrality'; Mackensen takes command; armament [150922]; Mackensen's 'Quadruple Alliance' on Balkan Front, with Third Bulgarian army, sets out to finish off Serbia and re-establish Constantinople railway [150930]; the role of Salonica toward the Bulgarian army [160514]; the battle of Florina; Bulgarians take Florina to occupy a dominating position on the Struma R.; Serb Army in Salonica cannot do much to oppose; Mackensen poised to invade Romania on word [160817]; «They voted for peace with their feet» – The 15 Dec 1917 Armistice between Russia and the Quadruple Alliance (Germany, Austria-Hungary, Turkey and Bulgaria); a three-month truce to negotiate a treaty of peace [171215];

Bullard, LGen Robert L. United States. First Commander of Second US Army created on 14 October 1917.

Bülow, Von. Cmdr Second German Army. *Premiers signes de déséquilibre dans les armées françaises du nord* [140820];

Burstall, Bgen E. Canada. CEF artillery commander. Congratulated for artillery support in severe fighting at Mont Sorrel, improvement in Canadian expertise, and control of army assets provided in 11-day battle where infantry regained lost ground [160613]; on the artillery support to be provided for the Vimy operation by First Br Army [170226];

Byng, Gen Sir Julian (Second Lord of Strafford). Corp Commander in Gallipoli, re-building Stopford's destroyed army corps. [151020]; Appointed Corps Commander, replaces Alderson; his early views on political protégés [160529]; Byng-Hugues relations on non-appointment of son Garnet Hugues to division command [160818]; Byng under Gough (Fifth Reserve Army) for assignment to the Somme Front; 1 Div sent up to Mouquet Farm without adequate preparations [160903]; Byng wants answers; brainstorm of officers to find new techniques on the offensive; Currie's interest [161128]; the story behind the «Byng Boys» [161201]; In December 1916, Byng is conducting a study of techniques that could improve low-level tactics to increase success on the offensive; he expect that more assaults of the type conducted in the Somme will be occurring in the future; Mgen Currie and BGS Pollexfen are working with him in this purpose [161227]; Byng informed that Corps would be involved in Vimy operation in Spring with another British Corps [170120]; Currie back from Verdun with his report finished on improvements on the offence; learns of the assignment of op at Vimy from Byng [170123]; Byng issues Orders for the deployment of the whole Corps at Vimy [170202]; FM Haig at Vimy [170214]; the two weeks of preliminary bombardment in Vimy [170321,31]; with the departure of Gen Allenby to Egypt Byng is appointed commander of Third British Army; he is replaced in the Canadian Corps command by Sir Arthur Currie, the commander of First Canadian Division [170609]; the Battle of Cambrai; a first massive use of tanks (476); an incomplete

victory [171120]; [Day 84]: a nightmare assignment for Gen Byng at Third Army; redo the Somme offensive in days [180820]; Warning to Currie for Canal du Nord [180922];

C

Cadorna, Gen Luigi. Italy. Commander of Italian armies; [150904]; the advantage of attrition on the Italian Front [161101]; Cadorna's iron discipline and military justice [161112]; Foch-Cadorna consultation for potential invasion of Switzerland by Germanic Alliance and ensuing threats to France and Italy [170408]; a request to France and Great Britain for divisions and guns to finish off the Austrians-Hungarians in Italy; responses [170715]; Cadorna replaced by Diaz [171112];

Calais. France. Channel Port [140929];

Cambon. French Ambassador to Great Britain [140802];

Cambrai. First Somme [140927];

CANADA

Government:

1915– Canada's entry into the War [140804]; Mobilization of 30,000 more men [141107]; *Camps pour étrangers de nations ennemies*; *Loi canadienne sur les mesures de guerre*; rôle du général Otter; *creation de camps* [141130]; finances publiques [141209]; influence of British *Defence of the Realm Act (DORA)* on Canadian *DORA*, *War Measures Act*, *War Appropriation Act*; *Canadian Patriotic Fund Act* [150308]; Decision for a second contingent in May 1915 [150330]; Canada has 36,000 overseas, 53,000 in Canada; 101,500 overall [150410]; censorship brought in [150611]; commitment to 150,000 in CEF [150708]; Borden to 1915 Imperial Conference in London [150714]; Borden with Second Division; views of Gen Gwatkin on appropriate size of Canadian Corps [150717]; French Canadians in Second Division [150811]; Register of War Manpower [150815]; 130,000 serving under the flag in August 1915 [150831]; Formation of Canadian Corps; *Militia Act* of 1904 [150913]; Hugues' organizational mess in London [151106]; *Wilfrid Laurier parle de guerre* [1512]; Bourassa and British links, conscription [151216]; artillery production in Canada [151230]; Borden announces that Canada will raise 500,000 men for armed services against CGS Gen Gwatkin's advice in Ottawa [151231];

1916– Plans for US-Canada border defence [160103]; Hugues' demand for more staff and command qualifications for senior Canadian officers [160106]; Borden's exaggerated expectations for 500,000 [160112]; food programs; record crops in 1915 [160125]; Parliament burns down [160203-4]; influence of the British *Military Service Act* on Canadian public opinion [160210]; March 1916 marks peak of recruitment at 35,000; regional particularities; urban vs rural [160323]; troubles between Alderson and Hugues [160326]; The Shell Scandal; how J.W. Allison involved in lucrative contracts under Hugues' oversight [160327]; Aitken meets Haig for replacement of Alderson; Borden in difficult position with Hugues [160423]; start of compulsory service of married men in GB; of interest to Canadians; Universal Conscription and democracy [160426,0502]; Byng as new Corps Commander [160529]; recruiting diminishing due to lesser numbers of Canadian men born in GB; 7,000 needed fast; provincial quotas and stats [160603]; 11-day battle of Mont-Sorrel sees withdrawal and regaining of ground by infantry, well supported by Canadian artillery with army reinforcements [160613]; Hugues becoming unpopular with MPs and troops [160705]; Canadian Royal Commission on Shell Committee [160720]; recognition that management of manpower needs to include industry and agriculture [160808]; Canada's Service badges [160816]; creation of the Canadian National Service Board to advise on manpower distribution [160918]; railway troops sent from Canada for Somme; British Railway Operating Division

[160927,1023]; visit of U-53 to US; significant threat to Canadian coastal waters [161002]; Borden recalls Sam Hugues home from England [161007]; creation of Ministry of Overseas Forces [161030]; Borden gives an ultimatum to Hugues that he is to conform to Cabinet exigencies [161106]; Sam Hugues resigns; under criticism, Borden publishes the damning correspondence between PM and minister; public opinion favors Borden [161111]; Gen Turner goes to London [161130]; recruitment of university students [161222]; End of year report on recruitment; fall in recruitment; Borden blames French Canadians; truth is that British-born men are all gone, Canadians as a whole are much less interested [161231];

1917– Canadian National Service Board; registration campaign to get personal information for all males of service age; R.B. Bennett in charge [170104]; Borden invited to the Imperial Conference of 1917 [170208]; The Canadian Defence Force (National Guard Project) [170303]; Borden in Imperial Conference; the pull of Imperial War Cabinet; his refusal [170316]; British Parliament's self-prolongation; creation of Ministry of National Service; influence on Canada's approach to potential conscription [170328]; contracts for construction of 22 steel trawlers in wake of resumption of USW [170329]; PM Borden at Imperial Conference makes historical statements for Dominions; Resolution IX [170426]; stats on manpower [170501]; Amalgamation of suffering private Canadian railroad companies into the Canadian National Railway (CN) which the Drayton-Acworth Report recommends [170502]; Borden back from imperial Conference introduces a *Military Service Act*; the conscription debate is open [170518]; extremist conscriptionists start propaganda [170520]; Bourassa, ideological father of Québec nationalism, objects to conscription, even to volunteer recruitment on behalf of British empire; visit of Balfour to Canada after his visit to United States [170523,28]; Canadian Defence Force, unsuccessful at recruiting, stop in recruiting; will be officially disbanded on 31 July 1917 [170524]; Meeting Borden-Laurier: Laurier refuses to be part of a coalition government and wishes to oppose Conscription in a referendum election [170529]; First reading of the *Military Service Bill* in Parliament, which does not proceed by ballot, but for all men 20 to 34 years of age not involved in key war activities; aiming at 100,000 men; three classes of single men first [170611]; On second reading of the *Military Service Bill*, Laurier takes the stand that he will fight the passing of the law by demanding that a referendum election be held before any decision taken; all now know that it will not pass smoothly [170618]; convoy system started in Canada [170622]; speech by Minister Kemp in Parliament on the needs for recruitment and policy options within compulsory service [170625]; looming crisis; stats on manpower [170630]; *Military Service Bill* passed in House of Commons, to become law on 29 August 1917; Laurier wants general election [170724]; damages by anti-conscriptionists against Montreal *Star* owner [170810]; French Canadians and France's appeals for help [170812]; start of the *Military Service Law*; first classes to report [170828]; widespread manifestation of opposition to the law in Montreal; statement by Monsignor Bruchési [170829]; in view of Federal elections due to be held in November, Borden, with the *Military Service Law* passed, is looking at the management of compulsory service by age-class; thinking is also directed to a *Military Voters' Act* to cater to overseas military ballots, and a few other things [170904]; Borden passes the *War Times Election Act*, where a new form of gerrymandering is introduced; families of men overseas will get voting privileges; this causes much trouble [170908]; the quick forced passage of the *War Times Election Law* by the Conservative government confirms that the Parliament will not be extended because of the war, that elections will be held in November, and that the special provisions contained in the law will be sufficient to bring in a pro-Conscription majority [170916]; Laurier's denouncing of a political purpose to a dreadful national orientation [170917]; Proclamation by

Minister of Justice confirms terms of Conscription for men in Canada [170919]; Borden ends Parliament; he goes to general elections Dec 17, 1917, with three main instruments: *The Military Service Act*; the *Wartime Elections Act* and the *Soldiers Voters Act* [171006]; Opposition Liberals shifting camp [171012]; Minister of Munitions Churchill behind the creation of Allied Maritime Transport Council (AMTC) to coordinate shipping among Allied nations; crucial step in prioritizing munitions transport; key step in creation of more Allied agencies for central coordination of assets [171104]; Launch first six of new Canadian armed anti-submarine, 350-ton trawlers built at Halifax and Toronto [171113]; Adm Kingsmill [171122]; Churchill on the allocation of shipping for munitions and on the importance of Canadian production of munitions [171124]; Borden's giveaway to farmers in view of elections [171202]; The Halifax Explosion; 1900 dead, 9,000 wounded [171206]; General election in Canada: the Making of a Great Divide; 153-82; on with Conscription; war justice [171217]; Fourth New Year's Eve of the War [171231].

1918— reporting for duty or avoiding service? the desertors' dilemma [180103]; The Francoeur Motion in Quebec on Conscription [180130]; taking care of the wounded: the new Federal department for Veterans [180202]; Kemp appointed Minister of Canadian Forces Overseas [180205]; Conference on Agriculture calls for «Soldiers of the Soil» program [180214]; Prohibition law becomes part of *War Measures Act* [180311]; Balfour's Allied Diplomatic Conference of London resolves that allies must ask Japan and US to act against Central Powers' invasion of Russia through the East: Siberia [180316]; Farm Enlistment Week [180317]; (For operations between 21 March and 4 Aug 1918, see **Battles of Kaiserschlacht**) – Easter Riots in Quebec City; second anniversary of Irish Easter troubles; Ontario troops dispatched; Conscription opposed [180329-30]; Orders-in-Council enact *Regulations for Utilizing the Human Energy of Canada to Best Advantage*, and *Providing for its enforcement consequent on disturbances in Quebec City*; these give Government the power to impose control of activities and rule of military law on civilians engaged on non-productive or riotous behavior [180404]; PM Borden amends *Military Service Law* to include more classes of men, invalidate the too numerous exemptions, and change exemption regulations; creation of the Overseas Militia Council in London; Albert Kemp oversees as OMFC [180504]; Borden in London is informed by Currie on what is needed from the 1918 Imperial Conference; this is instrumental in the creation of Imperial Cabinet sub-committee for Dominions to express views [180613-4]; the Canada Food Board's survey on manpower and potential agriculture growth [180620]; the tragedy of the *Llandoverly Castle* sunk by U-86 with loss of 234 lives, including 14 nurses [180627]; Canada approached for troops for the Russian Expedition; will lead to Gen Elmsley's force dispatched to Vladivostok in Aug 1918, returning in spring of 1919 [180628]; the Siberia Affair: Borden incensed that the British Government sends a request for troops through Colonial Secretary and Governor General when himself and Minister of Militia are in London; stalls on answer until amends are made [180712]; the decision of Chief Justice of the Canadian Supreme Court of Canada, Sir Charles Fitzpatrick, in a challenge on the constitutionality of the cancellation of exemptions to conscription, supports the government [180722]; PM Borden at Imperial War Cabinet in London, agrees that former President of Provisional Government of Russia, Kerensky, should be supported in his struggles against the Bolchevik government and the Central Powers's forces attempting to diminish Russia; he agrees in principle to two Allied operations, one in Vladivostok and one in Archangelsk [180725]; (See **Battles of Last Hundred Days**) Borden returns to Canada after Imperial Conference; his achievements there for Canada [180817]; his statement on the Canadian Expeditionary Force to Siberia; making a clear distinction from Imperial British forces [180824]; new law to apprehend Conscription dodgers;

Enforcement of the Anti-Loafing Order reorganizes civilian police services and gives new mandates [180913];

Ministries

Militia. Minister Sam Huges; first contingent [140923]; (See **Huges, CEF**); Minister Kemp (See **Kemp**)

External Affairs:

Undersecretary: PM is minister. Permanent Undersecretary Pope (See **Pope, Joseph**); *Défense du Canada* [140912];

Imperial Conferences (1916-1918) See **Canada/Government and Borden..**

Canada-US Relations: Balfour heads delegation to United States to discuss association in war; accompanied by multiple experts; includes Canadian Minister of Trade and Commerce, George E. Foster [170422]; consideration of consequence of Russian armistice (see **Supreme Council**) [171225];

Representative in London. High Commissioner in London. (See **Perley; Kemp**). **1918**— Currie succeeds, through Kemp's representation at War Office, in obtaining that a Canadian Section be installed at Haig's GHQ; clear statements of exigencies accompany Bgen Embury who will represent Kemp's and Currie's views as national authorities for CEF [180619];

ARMED SERVICES

Royal Canadian Navy.

1915— Old war ships and Fisheries vessels for port defences, and refurbished private yachts for patrols of the St. Lawrence [150716]; visit of U-53 to US; significant threat to Canadian coastal waters [161002]; merchant ships fitted with guns for their own protection; this hastens German USW [161031]; convoy system started in Canada; Halifax, NS, and St. John, NB [170622]; launch of 6 first armed trawlers for coastal patrols [171113]; Admiral Kingsmill, Director of Naval Services of Canada, gets a grip on a system of East Coast patrols with small Canadian patrol vessels, resulting in an anti-submarine force; stats on the results; success of convoy shipping [171122];

Canadian Ships:

Rainbow: War ship for port defence [150716];

Niobe: War ship for port defence [150716];

Grisle: Patrol on St. Lawrence [150716];

Florence: Patrol on St. Lawrence [150716];

Tuna: Patrol on St. Lawrence [150716];

Hochelega: Patrol on St. Lawrence [150716];

Stadacona: Patrol on St. Lawrence [150716];

Canada: Fisheries [150716];

Gulnare: Fisheries [150716];

Sable: Fisheries [150716];

Margaret: Fisheries [150716];

Canadian Expeditionary Force (CEF)

1914— Valcartier [140908]; Embarkation in Québec City, convoy [140923]; embarkation of first contingent; British commander Gen. Alderson; equipment for Salisbury Plains [140923]; Alderson [140925]; Leaving Gaspé, 31 ships; strength; convoy escort [141003]; arrival in Plymouth [141014]; visit by King, Queen and Kitchener in Salisbury Plains; importance of Canadian division in British plans [141104]; 25,000 eagerly awaited in France [141107]; reorganization of artillery, types [141117].

1915— Cavalry in CEF [141219]; decision on composition [150126]; Seely appointed commander of Horse; cavalry vs mounted infantry [150201]; King's inspection before departure to the front [150205]; movement from Salisbury to Saint-Nazaire [150208]; arrival of Div in France; Alderson and staff; Saint-Nazaire [150211]; on the way to BEF at Ypres [150215]; 3 Cdn Bde at Saint-Nazaire [150216]; Arrival at Fleurbaix on the line in Flanders [150303]; first Div Op Order for March 9, 1915 for Neuve Chapelle [150309]; Baptism of Fire [150309-

12]; Reserve [150325]; positions in Saint-Julien in V BrCorps, Second Br Army [150420]; Second battle of Ypres; chlorine gas used; Canadians hit by gas [150422]; Canadians out of the line after being gassed [150429]; Festubert [150523,30]; recruitment hits 100,000 [150529]; rest for Cdn Div [150531] Givenchy op [150613,16]; *second contingent (Gen Steele) à Shorncliffe* [150614]; The Turner-Currie-Hugues choice for division command [150624]; Kitchener announces arrival of Second Canadian Division [150705]; Turner at second Division [150817]; King George visits 2 Cdn Div at Shorncliffe [150902]; Artois Op, 25 Sep 1915 [150914]; 2 Cdn Div moved 13-23 Sep 1915, HQ Westouter; 1 Cdn Div in Ploegsteert ('Plug Street') [150919]; Canadian Corps in Second Br Army, Belgian Flanders; front line Ploegsteert to Wytshaete [150923]; Battle of Loos [150925]; Trench warfare; raids [151117]; PPCLI joins CEF [151215];

1916– Munitions improvements with Mills grenades, grenade launchers and more Lewis automatic rifles replacing the obsolete Colt machine guns [160211]; training for offensive action under Gen Kiggell's direction [160512]; Byng gets command of Canadian Corps [160529]; Heavy losses at Sanctuary Wood, including Cmdr 3 Cdn Div, Gen Mercer, Bgen Williams (8 Cdn Bde, wounded, POW); 89% casualties in 4th Cdn Mounted Rifles [160602]; the network of railroads created for the Somme offensive [160608]; End of Ross rifle in Canadian hands [160621]; three divisions of Canadian Corps being moved from First Br Army to Fifth (Reserve) Br Army so as to be involved in the Somme offensive; Byng will report to Gen Gough; 1 Cdn Div will be going first; 4 Cdn Div arriving in France for training [160811]; Byng under Gough; Currie's 1 Cdn Div immediately sent forward to Mouquet Farm; Currie's resentment at Gough [160903]; fighting of 3 Cdn Bde and 2 Cdn Bde in Mouquet farm [160908]; Second Cdn Division enters Somme theatre; relief of 1 Div and preparation for Flers-Courcelette offensive [160912]; platoon tactics: the mistake of Sunken Road [160924]; battle of theThiepval ridge; Cdn Corps and II Br Corps advancing from the East, facing hard-faced defences such as SCHWABEN, STUFF, ZOLLERN, HESSIAN, SADBURY, KENORA AND REGINA. [160929]; Cdn Corps (three Divisions) comes out of the Somme with 18,000 casualties in five weeks; REGINA TRENCH was not taken, but after the conquest of SCHWABEN REDOUBT and the Thiepval Mounds, it is now exposed; 4 Cdn Div enters the line on 13 Oct 1916 [161013]; 4 Cdn Div at REGINA TRENCH; 44 Bn in forlorn attack [161025]; artillery support to Cdn Corps, once returned to Artois, by the Indian Lahore Division artillery; own artillery remained with 4 Cdn Div in Somme [161029]; 4 Cdn Div involved in miserable Third Battle of the Ancre from 13 Oct [161118]; 4 Cdn Div out of Fifth Army end-November, joins Cdn Corps in First Army. Corps lost 24,000 men in Somme since 3 Sep [161126]; rebuilding in Artois [161126]; Byng wants answers; brainstorm of officers to find new techniques on the offensive [161128]; recruitment of university students; university companies; officer materiel sought [161222]; Byng's search for new tactics on the offense (see **Byng, Currie**) [161222]; Byng informed that Corps would be involved in Vimy operation in Spring with another British Corps [170120]; Currie back from Verdun with his report finished on improvements on the offense; learns of the assignment of op at Vimy from Byng [170123]; Byng issues orders for the deployment of the Corps at Vimy [170202]; a trench raid with 900 men! [170213]; the battle against underground tunnels [170219]; dealing with barbed wire: the No 106 Shell Fuse [170222]; the Great Hindenburg retreat: German armies on the Arras-Somme Front suddenly withdraw to the Siegfried (aka Hindenburg) Line [1702]; on the artillery support to be provided for the Vimy operation by First Army; Gen Horne and Major Brooke [170226-7]; danger of gas blown back on attackers; an unsuccessful Canadian trench raid in 4 Cdn Div [170228]; Vimy planning presented to First Army; on Zero Hour [170305]; Borden in France with troops [170309];

training for Vimy [170310]; **VIMY: (See Battles of/Vimy)** Beginning of two-week preliminary bombardment [170321]; the misery of the cold winter of 1916-1917 [170323]; the «Week of suffering» in Vimy [170331]; the British advance of three armies (eight corps) in front of Arras is successful on the first day, including at Vimy [170409]; Hill 145 [170410]; the medical evacuation system [170413]; Fresnoy: a Canadian victory in a sea of British reverses; spirit of the Dominions' soldiers, confident in their different style [170503]; Fresnoy and Arleux lost by replacements [170508]; Cdn Corps goes to Army Reserve, with tasks for 2 Cdn iDiv and 3 Cdn Div; good record for Spring 1917 [170517]; * Folkstone-Shorncliffe camp hit by Gotha bombers; 17 Canadians killed, 93 wounded [170525]; Byng appointed to command Third Br Army; Currie takes over command of Cdn Corps [170609]; Four Cdn Div gets own arty [170629]; Currie changes army plans for Lens [170707]; Haig agrees with Currie's plan [170723]; 1 Cdn Div and 2 Cdn Div attack Hill 70 [170815]; the tough Battle for Hill 70 and Lens and the loss of 900 men per day; the need for more infantrymen [170825]; Intelligence in the Canadian Corps; the Canadian Cyclist Corps [170909]; Haig's request for two Canadian divisions in Flanders; Currie refuses: all Canadian divisions or none! [171002]; Currie tasked with Passchendaele; expects 16,000 casualties; believes his corps is not recuperated from the battle of Lens; will do it [171013]; Currie goes from First Br to Second Br Army for the Cdn Corps task at Passchendaele [171015]; preparatory work for Passchendaele [171017]; Canadian Corps relieves II ANZAC as spearhead of Second Army [171022]; morning attack in Passchendaele [171025]; four Ves in one day in Passchendaele! Kinross, McKenzie, Mullin and Parkes [171030]; VC for Barron and Robinson [171106]; Meeting of the German General Staff at Mons; planning the Spring offensive; (★★ in one year the Corps will be parading in front of their windows!) [171111]; with the successes at Vimy, Lens and Passchendaele, the Canadian Corps acquires the reputation of 'shock troops' among Allies and enemies [171114]; on the adoption by British army of tactical principles already well used by the Germans, and the conclusions that the recently acquired Passchendaele must be abandoned because of vulnerabilities [171214]; reorganization of British divisions in France; from 12 to 9 battalions per division Currie objects for the Canadian Corps [171227, 180110];

1918– The 'Dunsterforce': *des Voyageurs canadiens en Mesopotamie* [180107]; Currie's reorganization of the Corps for 1918 battles on the offensive: disbanding 5 Cdn Div in England and assigning personnel to the four Cdn Corps divisions; specialist elements [180111]; Currie's plan for the enlargement of the Cdn Corps with forward reserve infantry, specialist at lower levels and all-arms teams for offensive movement [180207,20]; Winston Churchill's visit of the Cdn Corps [180211]; Growth in Specialised Arms: how combat troops now get assisted on the offensive throughout the BEF [180301]; For operations from 21 March to 4 August 1918, see **Battles of/Kaiserschlacht**. Charge of the Canadian Flowerdew Squadron (LdSH) [180331]; Back to the drawing board; a period of rest of next sixty days gives the opportunity for Currie to adapt the Canadian Corps to new environment; more inter-arm cooperation; a brigade of field engineers for each infantry brigade: mobility multiplied [180501,6]; Canadian General Hospital in Étaples bombarded; 66 killed, 73 wounded; work and status of nurses [180519]; Currie succeeds, through Kemp's representation at War Office, in obtaining that a Canadian Section be installed at Haig's GHQ; clear statements of exigencies accompany BGen Embury who will represent Kemp's and Currie's views as national authorities for CEF [180619]; Dominion Day Celebrations for the Canadian Corps in Tinqués, W of Vimy; Reserve time ends on July 15th, [180701]; the 9-battalion division's redeeming grace; Canadian views on a 12-battalion division with wherewithall [180706]; Foch's

conferences of Melun and Sarcus call for the Cdn Corps to go to Amiens [180724,6] Spanish Flu starts in the summer of 1918 with a first wave of severe symptoms that necessitate hospitalization; soldiers are hard-hit; the second wave of 1919 will kill some fifty million people across the world [180801]; severe casualties of the CEF in the last two months [181011]; taking the town of Denain [181020];

For operations between 4 Aug and 11 Nov 1918, see Battles of/Last Hundred Days

Canadians in Air Services. (See for Canadians in [**Great Britain/Air Services**, **/Royal Flying Corps (RFC)**, **/Royal Naval Air Service (RNAS)** and **Royal Air Force (RAF)**] Creation of Canadian Air Corps by Minister Hugues; Janney, Farr and Sharpe as first members; first aircraft; demise of Canadian Aviation Corps [150204]; Curtiss Flying School opens in Toronto [150510] the 'Fokker Scourge' [150903];

Canadian Formations and Units:

Canadian Corps. Created, with arrival of 2 Div in France; Lgen Alderson becomes commander of Cdn Corps on creation [150913];

Divisions:

(Follow description of operations in **Battles of, and Canada/Government, /CEF**)

First Canadian Division. Lgen Alderson as first Commander. MGen Currie takes command (See **Currie**) First in Somme theatre at Mouquet Farm [160903,12];

Second Canadian Division (Mgen Turner); relief of 1 Div in Mouquet Farm; preparation for Flers-Courcellette [160912];

Third Canadian Division: (Mgen Mercer) Losses at Sanctuary Wood [160602]; role of Lahore Division artillery with the Div [170629];

Fourth Canadian Division: The last fighting in the Somme; Gough's drastic measures in the Third Battle of the Ancre, rotating divisions into fire; exits on 26 Nov 1916 [161113,8,26]; Unsuccessful raid near Vimy with heavy casualties; gas blown back [170228]; role of Lahore Division artillery with the Div [170629];

Brigades:

1 Bde: (Mercer) On the line [150303];

2 Bde: (Currie) on the line [150303]; relieves 3 Bde at Mouquet Farm [160908];

3 Bde: (Turner) At St. Nazaire [150216]; on the line [150303]; first at Mouquet Farm on 3 Sep 1916 [160908];

7 Bde: GOC Macdonell [151215]; Sanctuary Wood [160602];

8 Bde: Losses at Sanctuary Wood [160602];

10 Bde: a trench raid with 900 men! [170213];

CEF Battalions and Canadian Regiments:

7 Bn. Trench raids [151117];

13 Bn: (Loomis) Royal Highlanders of Canada (Black Watch) [150216];

21 Bn: [151012];

22 Bn: [160124];

42 Bn: [151215];

44 Bn: 4 Cdn Div at REGINA TRENCH; 44 Bn in forlorn attack, loses 200 in the advance [161025]; in the battle of the Green Crassier; heavy casualties [170823];

49 Bn: [151215];

54 Bn: Unsuccessful raid in 4 Div [170228];

75 Bn: Unsuccessful raid in 4 Div [170228];

78 Bn: The battle against underground tunnelling [170219];

1st Grenadier Guards

Royal Highlanders of Canada (RHC)

Princess Patricia Canadian Light Infantry. See **PPCLI**.

Royal Canadian Regiment (RCR) [151215];

Canadian Cavalry:

Canadian Cavalry Brigade [150201]; The action of the brigade within 5 Brit Cav Div at Ytres, capturing the town while advancing in reconnaissance and advance guard before Fourth Army (Arras) toward the new Hindenburg

Line [170324];

19 Alberta Dragoons [141219];

Royal Canadian Dragoons (RCD) [141219]; [150201];

1st Canadian Mounted Rifles. Sent to Ypres as regular infantry [150910]; their raid near Arras in Dec 1916 [161223];

4th Canadian Mounted Rifles. Losses of 89% at Sanctuary Wood, Armagh Wood [160602];

2 King Edward's Horse (Brit.) [141219];

Lord Strathcona's Horse (LdSH) [141219];[1502]; the charge of the Canadian Flowerdeew Squadron (LdSH) at Moreuil Wood [180331];

Fort Gary Horse (FGH) [150201];

Specialist Arms

Royal Canadian Engineers (RCE). Currie's decision to include a brigade of Field engineers with each of the 12 infantry brigades; mobility, river crossing; field construction [180506];

Royal Canadian Artillery (RCA) Bgen Burstall congratulated by King for artillery support in severe fighting at Mont Sorrel, improvement in Canadian expertise, and control of army assets provided in 11-day battle where infantry regained lost ground [160613]; Three divisional artillery brigades remained with 4 Div in Somme [161029]; on the artillery support to be provided for the Vimy operation by First Army [170226]; Beginning of two-week preliminary bombardment in Vimy[170321]; the Canadian experience of gunners on the advance in the period 4-10 Sep 1918 [180907];

Royal Canadian Horse Artillery (RCHA) [141219]; [150201]; Brigade to France; att to GHQ [150720];

Canadian Army Medical Corps (CAMC) Includes 'Nursing Sisters' [170126]; the medical evacuation system [170412]; Canadian General Hospital in Étaples bombarded; 66 killed, 73 wounded; work of status of nurses [180519];

No 2 Stationary Hospital. Arrives in Boulogne; 300 beds; move to Le Touquet [141108];

No 3 Canadian General Hospital (McGill). largest of 45 Canadian sanitary facilities in France [150109,0506]

No 4 Hospital Stationnaire (Dr Arthur Mignault) [150506]

Motor Machine Gun. Embarkation [140923]; Brutinel and project [140924]; Salisbury Plains [141023]; Kitchener not impressed [141228]; proceeds to France as 1CMMGB [150617]; **Emma Gees**, McBride [151012]; formation of brigade MG companies, development of Lewis and Vickers tactics [151030]; implementation of Bde MG companies with sixteen MGs [160330];

Canadian Cyclist Corps. Serving Intelligence in the Canadian Corps[170909];

Canadian Overseas Railroad Construction Corps (CORCC).

Initial conception, Lcol C.W.P. Ramsey; training in Canada, departure 15 August 1915; eventually 16,000 in the war. [150121]; arrives in France [150824]; Somme [160608]; **First Canadian Overseas Construction Battalion**, sent for Somme, mainly for narrow-gauge; nine more will come in next year. [160927]; a call for volunteers for the railway units leads to increased recruitment [170220]; organization of **Corps of Canadian Railway Troops**, thirteen battalions, 30,000 troops, adjusting to upcoming need for movement forward of lines of communications; narrow gauge trains and tramways, rail construction, freight car building, engine crews [180511];

Canadian Forestry Corps (CFB). Employed in France and Great Britain (England and Scotland), Battalions with mobile sawmill companies providing wood for BEF and railroads [161125]; shipping of wood from Canada stopped [170209]; Appointment of Bgen McDougall as DG Timber Operations in Great Britain and France

[170301]; congratulations from high up for the work achieved [180412];

224 CFB Bn. Arr. May 1916 [161125];

230 CFB Bn. [161125];

238 CFB Bn. [161125];

242 CFB Bn. [161125];

The Canadian Defence Force (National Guard Project):

Scheme to create a Canada-based force tasked with local defence and protection of vital assets, with unstated intent to convert into ready-force in case of conscription; unsuccessful recruitment [170303];

Canadian Casualties: (See **Casualties**) First contingent; overall [150205]; special ceremony in London for Ypres losses [150510]; Verdun in May 1916 [160507];

Social aspects of war policy and consequences of war:

1915– Creation of the Register for War Manpower in August 1915, follows British example and foresees future needs for more manpower, military and industrial [150815]; the Ontario Regulation 17 Affair; Diane and Béatrice Deloges's campaign [150912]; horses in war; increasing prices [151031]; Muskoka in Flanders [151209]; *Laurier parle à Montréal* [151210]; French-Canadian debates: Bourassa and Asselin [151216,24]

1916– Agriculture: food production program «Patriotism and Production» [160120]; Canadian hospital created in Paris by *La Presse* of Montreal; fundraising throughout the province [160122]; concerted munition production for 1916 [160131]; journal of Nurse Dorothy Cotton, in Murmansk, Russia [160205]; troop entertainment; the Plunkett brothers and the Dumbells [160301]; Canada's Service badges [160816]; The Ontario *Temperance Act* takes effect, following the Federal *Prohibition Act*; often modified but not repealed until 1927 [160901]; Battle Honours for the Somme [161018]; animals in war: horses in Somme [161019]; the story behind the «Byng Boys» [161201]; The Beaverbrook-Rothermere War Artist program [161228]; End of year report on fall in recruitment; Borden blames French Canadians; truth is that British-born men are mostly gone, Canadians as a whole are much less interested [161231];

1917– very successful publication of the series of books *Canada in Khaki*, sold in UK even more than in Canada [170111]; despite the creation of women's services in Great Britain (WAAC and QMAAC), no other women's service was created in Canada than the 'Nursing Sisters' of the Canadian Army Medical Corps [170126]; the medical evacuation system [170412]; the election campaign of October 1917 and its social division; the case of Toronto [171019]; General elections and regional divide over Conscription [171217].

1918– Provincial Prohibition Laws fall under the Federal *War Measures Act* [180311]; 19 year olds included in overseas forces with new Order-in-Council [180417]; The Spanish Flu: starts in the summer of 1918 with a first wave of severe symptoms that necessitate hospitalization; the second wave of 1919 will kill some fifty million people across the world [180801]; finding conscription-dodgers [180913];

Canadian National Service Board (CNSB). Creation of the Canadian National Service Board to advise on manpower distribution [160918]; initiates, in January 1917, a survey of personal information on males of service age; R.B. Bennett as Director General [170104];

Carden, Adm Sackville. British. Commander of naval force in Dardanelles bombardment [150219]; proves insufficient to open Strait to RN [150227]; believes crossing can be done by RN [150304];

Carson, Edward. Irish Unionist MP. Appointed to Admiralty to replace Balfour at the Lloyd George coalition government (Dec 1916); replaced at Admiralty by Eric Geddes in July 1917 [170716];

Carson, Colonel John. Canada. Embarkation of first contingent [140923];

Castelnaud, Gén. French. Cmdr Second Fr Army. At Nancy [140819]; First Somme [140927];

Casualties. See for BEF [141107]; Battle of Krithia, Gallipoli [150428]; Artois 1915 [150620]; Gallipoli [150704,0825,1020]; Mesopotamia

[151122]; frostbites in Dardanelles [151127]; final tally for Gallipoli [160108]; First day of the Somme, 40,000 ; 80,000 in ten days [160701,3,10]; 120,000 in 21 days [160721]; Pozière: Australians leave half of their infantry there [160805]; attrition of August 1916 [160812]; half-million British casualties in 60 days in Somme (200,000 Brit; 200,000 German and 70,000 French) [160830]; Losses in the Brusilov offensive of 1916 [161009]; Eighth battle of Isonzo; 25,000 casualties on each side [161010]; Portugal in France [161020]; *950,000 morts en France fin-1916* [161204]; Mesopotamia [161213]; Verdun 700,000 Français [161215]; Chemin des dames: 30,000 killed; 100,000 wounded, 4,000 missing in 8 days [170424]; quarter million men lost in 23 days! [170509]; Eleventh Battle of the Isonzo: 1/4m [170817]; Caporetto: German-Austrian-Hungarian operation with reinforcements has tremendous success with horrific loss of Italian personnel (265,000 captured with 3,000 guns) [171024]; *les pertes associées à 41 jours de combats au printemps, en France: 17,000 par jour!* [180505]; losses in French African colonial troops; their total losses in 4 years [180529];

Caucasus. Region of Russia where Ottoman, German and Russian interests clash. Turkey's Envers Pacha's winter campaign [141206][150111]; Russian Gen Yudenich captures port city of Trazibond, on the Black Sea, from Ottomans, after his winter campaign, also took Erzurum, Anatolia; Armenian population reduced [160406]; (See **Dunsterville's Dunsterforce**)

Cavalry. British Cavalry officers' obsession with sweeping advances by mass cavalry, deep into enemy line, in trench warfare. Rawlinson's plan for Fourth Army for the Somme; obvious influence of Haig in cavalry tasks [160614]; See 'Haig's Horse Shit' [160917];

Cemal Pasha. Member of Young Turk Cabinet; involved in operation against Suez canal; governor of Syria, ambitions to become Khedive of Egypt [150203];

Chamberlain, Austen. British Sec for India. Authorizes op in Mesopotamia up to Kut [150603];

Chamberlain, Neville. Appointed Director of National Service; Responsibility for manpower in all civilian fields [170206]; Parliament prolongs itself; becomes Minister with creation of Ministry of National Service [170327,8]; resignation following Royal Commission on Mesopotamia [170713]

Champagne. German retreat from Marne to Aisne R. [140913]; *Plans de Joffre pour 'grignoter' en 1915; importance des chemins de fer; campagne de Aisne et Champagne* [150217]; (For 1917, see **Battles of/Chemin des Dames**; for 1918, see **Battles of/Kaiserschlacht, Last Hundred Days**).

Channel. Pre-War British-French treaty on [140802]; Channel Ports [140929];

Charleroi. City of France. In Schlieffen Plan [140804]; Lanzerac's Battle for survival [140822];

Charteris, Gen. Haig's Intelligence Chief at BEF GHQ. BEF CoS Charteris' optimistic evaluation of Somme so far [160718]; On the pros and cons of 'Press Lords' Beaverbrook and Northcliffe, distributing information and propaganda in America with mixed results on Canadian recruitment an American opinion [170403]; further views on propaganda [170813]; on the necessity of resolution [170928]; PM involved in removing close senior staff officers near Haig (incl. Kigges, CoS, and Charteris, Int); resentment at such unwarranted interference [171230];

Chemin des Dames. (For 1917, see **Battles of/ Chemin des Dames, Nivelle; France/Government, /French Army**). *Échec des opérations printemps-automne de 1915 pour le Saillant de Noyon, de Arras et Reimss et Soissons* [151013];

China. Emperor. The reply to Japan's Twenty-One Demands [150118]; discussion on joining the Entente [151112]; Yuan Shikai, Emperor; struggle with Kuomintang [151213]; death of Yuan-She-k'ai; leaves great void in China that will be filled by regime of divided Warlords [160605]; China declares war to Germany and Austria-Hungary [170814];

Christmas. Truce of 1914 [141224];

Churchill, Winston: 1914– First Lord of the Admiralty, Oil [140717]; Ordering the Fleet to Scapa Flow [140717]; *repli de Anvers* [141001];

Canadian contingent leaving Gaspé; convoy protection [141003]; protection of Scapa Flow [141008,17]; at Antwerp [141010]; bombardment of Dardanelles forts; idea of naval armada [141103];

1915– Opening of naval fire in Dardanelles [150219]; Ideas on ‘mechanical device for taking trenches’; meeting with Maj Hetherington; creation of Admiralty Landship Committee (E.H. Tennyson-d’Eyncourt); the Concrete Land Ship [150221]; failure of Dardanelles naval raid [150323]; out of Admiralty with Asquith coalition [150520]; prevented from going to Dardanelles [150719]; not included in new War Committee [151102]; resigns position in Cabinet and enlists in the Army [151121]; Major in 6th Royal Scott Fusiliers; famous letter on ‘Caterpillars’ [151203];

1916– Speech on conscription [160511]; Parliamentary Enquiries launched into Mesopotamia and Dardanelles operations [160707]; Presents a paper to Minister of Munitions on «Mechanical Power on the Offensive», outlining the overall strategy of using mechanical vehicles on the battlefield; prescient and brilliant [161109];

1917– The Milner enquiry on Dardanelles is out; Churchill’s defence [170215]; back in government; appointed Minister of Munitions; full of ideas but determined to do well [170616]; «Blasting Power and Moving Power» expounds on the value of offensive armoured vehicles in six main areas [171020]; Haig, after Cambrai, on the limitations of tanks in battle and curtailing growth of Tank Corps; limitation to 28 battalions of 60 tanks (1,620) and establishment of 22,500 men; his insistence on increasing infantry rather than machines [171204];

1918– visit to the Cdn Corps; with MGen Lipsett [180211]; Churchill’s plan for Armament production for 1918-1919 [1803]; Churchill’s interest in German tanks [180319]; his description of American soldiers suddenly flooding the roads, counter-attacking Op BLÜCHER [180529]; reflexions on the added production in British industries allowed by influx of American troops; views for 1919; full-scaled armoured warfare [180621];

Cinema. (See **Aitken**) Beaverbrook; Canadian innovations; information and propaganda in London [150909];

Clarke, Lionel (‘Leo’) B. VC. Acting Corporal, for extraordinary personal fighting between Mouquet Farm and Coucelette [160910];

Clemenceau, George. Government returns to Paris; secret sessions; [141222]; visiting Somme, speaking with Haig and British officials [160504]; Clemenceau publishes a devastating criticism of the Ribot government; Radical socialist minister Malvy seen as protecting interests of labour to the detriment of the army [170722]; Replacement of Painlevé as prime minister of France; *Clemenceau devient Chef du Cabinet*; at 76, he comes to fight tiredness and relaxation wherever he finds them [171121]; LG’s meeting with Clemenceau as prime minister of France for the first time; good impression of *Le Tigre*; political background [171201]; Clemenceau confronts Pétain over his reforms and defensive posture [171218]; style is substance [180113]; faced with Haig and Pétain’s objections to centralization, Clemenceau strengthens Foch’s position in the Supreme War Council [180204]; *le Devoir d’Optimisme* [180308];

Coblentz. Luxembourg. Grand Headquarters of the German Armies in the West (GQG) [140820];

Collishaw, Raymond. Canada Air Ace, Leadership in No 10 Naval Squadron, B Flight, the «Black Flight» of the RNAS. This all-Canadian RNAS squadron with Sopwith Triplane was sent to France to help RFC; mass aerial combat near Messines [170606];

Committee of Imperial Defence (CID): Permanent Committee of the British Cabinet tasked with advising on Imperial policy. Canadian High Commissioner at [140714]; DORA [140808]; (See **Hankey**)

Commission internationale de La Haye: [140723]; [140725];

Commonwealth War Graves Commission (Commission des Sépultures de Guerre du Commonwealth). Créée le 21 mai 1917 [170517];

Compiègne, Forêt de. Fr. *CEB* à [140901];

Connaught, Duke of. Governor General of Canada [140801]

Conrad, Gen. See **Hötzendorf**.

Conscription. Canada. Bourassa’s *Que devons-nous à l’Angleterre?* raises the issue of military obligations to Great Britain [151216]; Olivar Asselin’s loyalty to the Crown; *Pourquoi je m’engage* [151224]; the influence of the British Military Service Act on public opinion in

Canada [160210]; Churchill’s speech on conscription «Temporizing in Peace and War» [160511]; Conscription Law in Great Britain [160523,5]; In June 1916, drastic reduction of volunteer recruitment in Canada; no more men born in GB; manpower for agriculture and industry; 7,000 needed rapidly [160603]; letter to Bourassa from Captain Talbot Papineau at the Front; published in *Le Devoir*; exhortation to join [160728]; government considers that whole question of manpower must be evaluated on higher plane of all Canadian responsibilities; need for management system that will reconcile military recruitment, industry and agriculture [160808]; After little success with *National Registration Law* and *National Service Law*, Borden, back from Imperial Conference introduces a *Military Service Act*; the conscription debate is opened [170518]; First reading of the *Military Service Bill* in Parliament, which does not proceed by ballot, but for all men 20 to 34 years of age not involved in key war activities; aiming at 100,000 men; three classes of single men to go first [170611]; on second reading of the *Military Service Bill*, Laurier takes the stand that he will fight the passing of the law by demanding that a referendum election be held before any decision taken; all now know that it will not pass smoothly [170618]; speech by Minister Kemp in Parliament on the needs for recruitment and policy options within compulsory service [170625]; looming crisis; stats on manpower [170630]; his article in *New York Times* justifying his stance against Canadian conscription [170710]; house of Montreal *The Star* newspaper owner Hugh Graham (later Baron Lord Atholstan of Huntingdon) is damaged by explosives for pro-conscription position [170809]; In view of Federal elections due to be held in November, Borden, with the *Military Service Law* passed, is looking at the management of compulsory service by age-class; thinking is also directed to a *Military Voters’ Act* to cater to overseas military ballots, and a few other things... [170904]; Borden passes the *War-Time Election Act*, where a new form of gerrymandering is introduced; families of men overseas will get voting privileges; this causes much trouble with anticonscriptionists [170908]; Easter Riots in Quebec City; second anniversary of Irish Easter troubles; Ontario troops dispatched; Conscription opposed [180329-30]; (See **Borden**; **Bourassa**; **Canada/Government**; **Laurier**)

Conseil Impérial d’Autriche-Hongrie. [140707];

Constantinople. British intent on taking Constantinople through Dardanelles, allies involved [150224]; Shock resulting from bombardment of Dardanelles forts [150304]; Allied promises and rewards for the capture [150318]; (See **Battles of/Dardanelles**, **/Middle East**; **Allenby**).

Coronel, Battle of. (See **Battles of/Coronel**)

Courcelette. First Somme. [140927]; (See **Battles of/Somme**; **Canada/CEF**; **Great Britain/BEF**)

Courland. Lettonia and Courland fall under German influence [180318];

Cowdray, Viscount (Weetman D. Pearson). Successful British oilman brought into government by LG to take the Air Board in Jan 1916, so as to pacify the RFC-RNAS rivalry [170117]; Cabinet issues a charter to the Air Board for better cooperation [170205];

Cracow. (Fr. *Cracovie*). (See **Brusilov**) [141120];

Craddock, Adm Sir Christopher. Commander of Atlantic Squadron in the Falklands Islands; (See **Battles of/Coronel**). Ordered to chase German East Asiatic Squadron W. of South America [141006]. Battle of Coronel; his death [141101];

Cunliffe, Gen F.H. British. Involved in fighting in German Kamerun, siege of Mount Mora [150907];

Curragh Incident. Irish controversy [150201];

Currie, Bgen Arthur W.: (See also **Canada/BEF**). Canada. Cmdr 2 Cdn Bde; on the line [150303]; choice of division commanders; Currie-Turner-Hugues controversy [150624]; Currie’s 1 Cdn Div sent first into Somme; resentment against Commander of Fifth (Reserve) Br Army, who does not allow adequate preparations to take over from Australians at Mouquet Farm [160903]; Byng wants answers; brainstorm of officers to find new techniques on the offensive; Currie gets going [161128]; In December 1916, Byng is conducting a study of techniques that could improve low-level tactics to increase success on the offensive; he expect that more assaults of the type conducted

in the Somme will be occurring in the future; MGen Currie and BGGs Pollexfen are working with him in this purpose; Currie is planning a visit to Verdun to study French lessons learned [161227]; Visit to Verdun 2-10 Jan 1917; looking for useable lessons learned; his brilliance recognized by Byng [170102]; Currie back from Verdun with his report finished on improvements on the offence; learns of the assignment for op at Vimy from Byng [170123]; Byng issues Orders for the deployment of the whole Corps at Vimy [170202]; Haig and Nivelles visit Vimy; meeting Nivelles at Vimy after meeting him at Verdun a month ago [170214,6]; with the departure of Byng, Currie is made Major General and becomes a Knight Commander of the Order of St Michael and St George (KCMG); he will heretofore be Sir Arthur Currie [170609]; his first command of the corps for battle: Lens; changing Army plans for a better one [170707]; Haig agrees with Currie's plan for Lens; Hill 70 will be the Canadian battleground [170723]; first day of the battle for Hill 70: 1 Div and 2 Div attack [170813]; Currie tasked with Passchendaele; expects 16,000 casualties; believes his corps is not recuperated from the battle of Lens; will do it nevertheless [171013]; Currie goes from First Br to Second Br Army for the Corps task at Passchendaele; memories of Saint-Julien, two and a half years ago [171015]; Plumer sent to Italy, replaced by Rawlinson as Second Army Commander; Currie worked for him in Somme [171108]; «Duke of Passchendaele» [171123]; on the adoption by British army of tactical principles already well used by the Germans, and the conclusions that the recently acquired Passchendaele must be abandoned because of vulnerabilities [171214]; reorganization of British divisions in France; from 12 to 9 battalions per division [171227,180110]; Currie's views on larger divisions, larger Corps troops, with reserves of infantry, specialist teams at lower levels, and all-arms mobile tactics for offensive action; refuses to create a Cdn Army; wants a superb Cdn Corps, not a weak army [180207-8]; Friction between Currie, Horne and Haig when Currie insists that his divisions that were dispatched in haste during Op GEORGETTE are to come back to him immediately [180415]; Back to the drawing board; a period of rest gives the opportunity to adapt to new environment; more inter-arm cooperation [180501]; LGen Maxse's training methods [180510]; Borden in London is informed by Currie on what is needed from the Imperial Conference; this is instrumental in the creation of Imperial Cabinet sub-committee for Dominions to express views [180613-4]; Currie succeeds, through Kemp's representation at War Office, in obtaining that a Canadian Section be installed at Haig's GHQ; clear statements of exigencies accompany BGen Embury who will represent Kemp's and Currie's views as national authorities for CEF [180619]; Canadian views on a 12-battalion division with wherewithall [180706]; preparations for Amiens [180728]; Currie and the planning and winning of the **Battle of Canal du Nord** [180911,21-2]; (See **Battles of Flanders, /Vimy, /Kaiserschlacht, /Last Hundred Days**)

Curzon, Earl C. of Kedleston. Politician and High Official, former Viceroy of India, Chair of Air Board; brought into the Lloyd George War Cabinet in Dec 1916. [170117]; in Lloyd George's War Policy Committee

Cyprus. British offer to Greece [141212]; offered again, for honoring Greco-Serbian alliance; refused by King [151016];

Czechoslovakia. Allied Czech contingent of 30,000 in Russia; opposed to Bolsheviks after Revolution; become enemy of Communists within Russia; their escape to the Far East [180514]; fighting along Trans-Siberian railway and Vladivostok [180531]; (See **Battles of Last Hundred Days**)

D

Damascus Protocol. [150601];

Dardanelles. Turkey. British campaign. (See **Battles of Dardanelles**).

De Castro, Gen Alvaro. Portugal. Governor General of Portuguese African colony of Mozambique. His cooperation with British Imperial forces against German Imperial guerilla in the German Protectorates [180129];

Defence of the Realm Act (DORA). **Consolidation Act (1914) Canada:**

Description [140808]; Amendments and influence over Canadian legislations [150308]; (See **Great Britain/Government; Canada/Government**)

Delcassé. France. Foreign Minister; involved in Allied conference [150207];

Denmark, Kiev Kanal, [140629]

Derby, Earl of (Edward Stanley). *Sous-Secrétaire à la Guerre, prend la responsabilité de continuer un programme d'enrôlement volontaire, le «Derby Scheme», pour empêcher une conscription* [151023];

De Valera, Eamon. Nationalist Irish political leader of Catholic Sinn Féin party, opposed to British Conscription; future PM of Ireland [180418];

Deventer, Gen Jacob Van. Leader of British Imperial forces involved in fighting German Imperial forces of the German Protectorates in Africa; the meeting Deventer-De Castro in Portuguese Mozambique [180129];

Diaz, Gen Armando. Italy. Replaces Cadorna after the disaster of Caporetto; establishes deep defence along Piave R.; Germanic reinforcements return to original task [171112];

Dinant. [140818];

Dixmude. Belgium. Defence of Lys along railroad Dixmude-Nieuport; dikes opened [141026];

Djemal Pasha. (aka Jamal). Turkey. GOC Fourth Turkish Army, Governor of Syria. Decision on fate of Armenian refugees [150621]; draconian régime; 'Blood Shedder' of Syria [150802];

Dreadnought. Super D. Class [140630]

Drina River. Serbia. Battles on [140813]; [140824];

Drouot, Paul Louis. French poet. Killed in Lorette; others named [150608];

Dumba, Dr. Constantin T. Austria-Hungary. Ambassador to United States caught in scandal publicized as 'Dumba Affair,' when Dumba caught undermining labour relations in US in view of slowing down war production. Negative to Triple Alliance reputation in US. [150929];

Dunkirk. Belgium. [140929]; *repli de Anvers* [141001];

Dunsterforce, Major General Lionel C. Commander of ad hoc **Dunsterforce**, tasked with special mission to the Caucasus to raise anti-Bolchevik and anti-Ottoman troops to secure oil resources near Caspian Sea. Multinational force, (incl. Canadians selected from CEF) is a mobile Special operations force. Recruited from BEF, falls under command of Baghdad command (See **Mesopotamia**) Ottomans at Baku [180826];

E

Edinburgh. Scotland. Grand Fleet near Firth of Forth [140816];

Egypt. British Protectorate with local ruler *Khedive* and British Governor General. *Jihad* and British Martial Law [141128]; Protectorate declared, *Khedive* Abbas Hilmi replaced by Prince Hussein Kamel. [141218] [150203]; Ottoman-German operation against Suez Canal [150203]; ANZACS formed in Cairo [150220]; Cairo Bureau involved in Arab contacts [151019]; Attack from Sennusites from the **W. Ahmed Sharif as-Senussi.** [151114]; The Sykes-Picot Agreement in London [160104]; increase in British troops after the evacuation of Gallipoli; defence strengthened against Ottoman Sinai incursions [160116]; Murray mandated to form Mediterranean Expeditionary Force (EEF), secure Sinai front, maintain reserves for India and get as many troops as possible to France; 29 Div to France [160314-5]; Cairo Military Intelligence Office tasked with subversion in Mesopotamia; Captain T.E. Lawrence goes there [160325]; Gen Murray advances with Egyptian Expeditionary Force into the Sinai to control El Arish to prevent Ottoman incursions; Australian and New Zealand cavalry and brigade of camelry involved [161224]; Gen Murray's attack on Ottoman stronghold in Gaza, unsuccessful; has to withdraw [170326]; Second Battle of Gaza: set piece battle is a severe defeat for the British with heavy casualties (6,500); Murray's reputation damaged [170417]; Lawrence's departure on the circuitous route to Aqaba [170531]; Allenby being sent to replace Murray in Egypt [170501]; PM asks him for 'Jerusalem at Christmas' [170601]; Lawrence's success in Aqaba and plans for the Arab Army to assist

the EEF against Syria [170711-2]; Lawrence's new mandate after Aqaba, as official British agent with King Hussein and Prince Faisal's Arab army; aims concerted with Allenby's EEF for Palestine flank protection toward Syria [170718]; Palestinian campaign (see **Battles of/Middle East; Great Britain/ Government**); Jaffa taken by Allenby's EEF [171116];

Elmsley, MGen James H. Canada. Siberia Force. Commands Canadian force of 4,200 men sent to Vladivostok in August 1918, returned in the spring of 1919; involve there in fighting and policing the city. The Siberia Affair: Borden incensed that the British Government sends a request for troops through Colonial Secretary and Governor General when himself and Minister of Militia are in London; stalls on answer until amends are made [180712]; [180628]; (See **Canada/Government**). elmslysiberia

Entente or Triple Entente. Fr. *Traité de Londres*. Great Britain, France and Russia. *Déclaration contre la paix séparée*; texte; description [140904]; (aka Treaty of London); (See **Great Britain; France; Russia; Italy; Japan**). Japanese association with [141208];

Enver Pasha: Minister of 'Young Turks' Government [140722]; Deputy C-in-C of Ottoman forces, takes Third Ottoman Army into Russia [141206]; Campaign a dismal failure [150111]; Ottoman-German operation against Suez Canal [150203]; (See **Turkey**)

Estonia. Estonia declares independence with German support [180224];

Erzberger, Matthias. German politician of Center party. prominent member of Reichstag inter-party committee declares intent to discuss resolution expressing readiness to negotiate for a peace without forced annexations [170702]; (See **German Government**)

F

Fabeck, Gen Max Von. Fabeck Group: ad hoc German formation (army-level) in Ypres Salient at Gheluvelt; aims to cross Lys and Yser [141029]; (See **Germany/Army; Battles of/Flanders; Great Britain/BEF**)

Faisal (aka Feisal). Son of King Hussein; Damascus Protocol [150601]; His conduct of operations leading to the seizure of Medina [170118]; Lawrence's new mandate after Aqaba, as official British agent with King Hussein and Prince Faisal's Arab army; aims concerted with Allenby's EEF for Palestine flank protection toward Syria [170718]; named Supreme Commander of Arab Army [170728]; delays imposed by major British troop withdrawal to the France front; concern for Faisal [180525]; Meeting of Faisal and Weizmann; discussion of possibility of Jewish land after Arab victory in Hejaz [180604]; a feud between King Hussein, Prince Faisal and Syrian tribal commanders; Lawrence's intervention to doctor a letter to get the show on the road again; glimpses of post-war divisions [180904]; (See **Hussein; Lawrence; Egypt**)

Falkenhayn, Gen. Eric. War Minister; becomes CIGGS as well; Reorganizes GHQ and High Command; relations with Tirpitz and Hindenburg; priority to Western Front; GHQ [140914,5]; Race to the Sea [140920]; (See **Battles of/Race to the Sea**); Lille and Ghent; the Falkenhayn Plan [141011]; (See **Battles of/Flanders**) renewed Falkenhayn offensive against Ypres (5-11 Nov) [141106]; All out *Letzter Druck*, last battle of the Yser [141111]; digging in for the winter [141112]; Falkenhayn's creation of FM Mackensen's 'Quadruple Alliance' Balkan Front to finish off Serbia and re-establish the Constantinople railway [150930]; differences between Falkenhayn and Bethmann on USW [151211]; Falkenhayn behind the Verdun op (see **Battles of/Verdun**); beginning of the Somme op; (See **Battles of/Somme**); shifting the weight to the north [160711]; the case of Romania; Falkenhayn attempts to manage many theatres; Romania is slipping away [160809] (See **Romania**); results of the France offensives on precarious balance West-East-Sideshow [160820]; altercation between Prince William (Kaiser's son), Commander of Fifth German Army, with his distinguished CoS Gen Knobelsdorf, in Aug 1916, at Verdun, over Falkenhayn's leadership; show frustrations in armies having to send reinforcements to Somme or East Front [160826]; Declaration of war to German Empire by Italy and Romania show diminishing prospects of Quadruple Alliance [160827-8]; Conference in Spa; Falkenhayn removed as CIGGS; Hindenburg and

Ludendorff recalled from the East and installed as CIGGS and GMG, in reality, head of military regime [160829]; returns to army command (Ninth Ge Army); Liddell Hart's views on Falkenhayn's style, being too prudent [160906]; Port of Constanza falls to Mackensen; Romania no longer has no port; Salonica action is having no effect on Romania, being squeezed between Falkenhayn and Mackensen [161022]; Fall of Romania [161206]; sent to Constantinople to assess the possibility of retaking Baghdad; his plan for Op Lightning with joint Turkish-German Asia Corps; he sees retaining Palestine as critical factor [170507]; (See **Battles of/Mesopotamia, Middle East**); Allenby being sent to replace Murray in Egypt; PM asks him for 'Jerusalem at Christmas' [170601];

Falkland Islands. Atlantic Squadron; Cradock ordered to chase German East Asia Squadron from Falklands to W. of South America [141006]; Naval Battle of Coronel [141101];

Farr, Private Harry. typical case of 'Shot at Dawn' soldier with good behavior, suddenly incapacitated by mental stress. Statistics on British case of various types [161016];

Feisi Pasha: Turkish army commander in Gallipoli action, fired by Sanders, replaced by Kemal [150809];

Film. See Cinema.

Finance: War financing. French bonds [151126];

inland. The case of Finland; separating from Russia after Bolchevik Revolution and pause of Brest-Litovsk [171205]; (See **Russia**).

Firth of Forth. Scotland. Grand Fleet at [140816];

Fischer, Fritz. Historian. German policy to create *Mittleuropa*; September program [140928];

Fisher, Adm John 'Jacky' A. Recalled by Churchill. [150125]; resignation [150515]; his conditions for return [150517]; See **Great Britain/Government, /Royal Navy**)

Flamethrower. Introduced. [150226]; first German use [150728]; in Verdun in large quantities [160228];

Flanders. Pre-War diplomacy [140802]; première bataille d'Artois [141001]; *repli de Anvers* [141001]; (See **Battles of/Flanders, Race to the Sea; Belgium**)

Foch, Gen Ferdinand. (See **France/Government, /French Army; Battles of/Frontiers, /Marne, /Race to the Sea, /Flanders, /Champagne and Artois, /Verdun, /Chemin des Dames, /Kaiserschlach, /Last Hundred Days; Supreme War Council**)

1914– *Nommé commandant groupe d'armées du nord, Course à la mer; QG à Doullens; CEB en Flandre* [141004]; Defence along Yser R. [141026]; end of Race to the Sea [141119]; agrees with Joffre's December Plan [1412];

1915– Conflict in strategy in France between Joffre, F. and French [150307];

1916– Concerns with relief of Verdun from North and insufficient munitions for Somme [160414]; Foch, with army commanders Fayolle and Michelet, waiting, pushes for Haig to advance faster [160729]; difficult relations with Lloyd George, who wants to undermine Haig [160813]; with the arrival of Lyautey as Minister of War and PM Briand's determination to change the army's culture, Foch loses his job as Commander of the Group of armies 'Center'; pleads to remain in the action; appointed to GHQ-Senlis to study strategic problems; takes trusted CoS Weygand with him [161217]; appointed head of South Army Group involved in Plan H (*Helvétie*); which caters to the defence of SE area of France [170121]; Foch-Cadorna consultations for potential invasion of Switzerland by Germanic Alliance, and potential threats to France and Italy [170408]; Haig's plans for an all out offensive in Flanders; LG's objections; Foch's 'duck march' remark [170617]; now CoS for CinC Pétain, Foch views as a 'Westerner,' with some centralising principles that are not immediately accepted [170627]; Paris conference where Italians and French do not see eye-to-eye; Italians seen as determined to gain ground against Austria and do nothing else [170725]; hammering away at the idea of a central control in France [170806]; Caporetto: Foch must go to the rescue; 40 trains a day for Italy [171028];

1918– Note 12 of SWC recommends centralization of reserves to the C-in-Cs of the French theatre; Haig and Pétain do not respond well [180122]; *mise au point sérieuse entre Pétain et Foch sur la notion*

de réserves communes entre les armées nationales en France; Pétain s'y oppose et empêche même Foch de travailler sur de tels plans [180125]; faced with Haig's and Pétain's objections to centralization, Clemenceau strengthens Foch's position in the Supreme War Council [180204]; (For operations 1918, See **Battle of Kaiserschlacht**); named central 'coordinator' between French and British C-in-Cs by Milner and Clemenceau at Doullens [180326]; Foch named in authority to conduct overall control of operations in France in the name of Supreme War Council; national Commanders-in-Chief, Pétain, Haig and Pershing, to follow his plans [180403]; the Summit of Abbeville: Foch given additional responsibilities as overall commander of whole Western Front, including Italy; Versailles planning staff transferred to his HQ; Pershing agrees to priority of transport of troops over materiel [180502]; On 20 May 1918, Foch senses that the Germans are overextended and vulnerable; he orders advances in all armies of the Allied Front in France, with priorities around Amiens and Béthune [180520]; Haig-Foch argument over Haig's control of British divisions in Strategic Reserve; Foch is adamant; he cannot have them! [180607]; Foch on increased reserves for July and timing as the key factor [180629]; allied tank production makes a difference in the field; British production of 400 Mark Vs and French production of 2,700 FTs by war-end [180630]; See **Battles of/Last Hundred Days. [Day 98]** Maréchal de France [180806]; the crucial planning for 26-29 Sep 1918 [180923]; Foch reacts to Pres Wilson's indications that he would like to be mediator for an armistice; in the military committee of the Supreme War Council he makes it clear that the military authorities of the allies will have to be involved in ensuring that the Central Powers, if they want an armistice, will have to relinquish the arms that make them capable of renewing war; this includes land, sea and air material of war [181008]; (See **Supreme War Council**).

Fonck, René. France. Ace pilot with most confirmed victories among Allied pilots in the war [180509];

Food. Commission of Relief in Belgium; works at bringing food relief to starved Belgium. Works with French *Comité national de Secours et d'Alimentation* [150302]; Canadian agriculture food production program «Patriotism and Production» [160120]; the issue of naval blockades and food deprivation [160125]; In early 1918, a great improvement has been made in the transport of food for the Allies; convoys, increase in shipbuilding and better techniques in agriculture have all come to boost food distribution; governments, including the Canadian government, are making great efforts to ensure Food is no longer a weapon against the people [180101]; the Canada Food Board's survey on manpower and potential agriculture growth; the «Soldiers of the Soil» ([180214]) and «The Farm Service Corps» for women contribute programs for the enhancement of productivity [180620];

FRANCE:

Government:

1914– Président Poincaré sending emissaries to Belgium [140811]; Government of *Union Sacrée* [140828]; Justice in war [140906]; *Miracle de la Marne* [140909, 11]; Race to the Sea (17 Sep-17 Nov) [140910,4,20]; *Première Bataille d'Artois* [141001]; Declaration of War to Turkey [141105]; On military 'justice d'exception', execution for disciplinary examples [141204]; back to Paris from Bordeaux [141222]; (See **French Army; Battles of/Marne, Course à la Mer, Flandres**)

1915– (See **France/French Army; Battles of/Artois and Champagne**) The consequences of Bulgaria's treaty with Triple Alliance; reinforcement of Salonica in Fall of 1915 [150924]; Foreign Minister Delcassé resigns against PM Viviani's support of both Joffre and Salonica [151014]; Viviani 'Union Sacrée' government toppled; Aristide Briand takes over with new ideas on *Conseil Supérieur de Défense*, brings in Galliéni, teamwork with Président Poincaré [151026]; War financing [151126]; *Briand préserve Salonica* [151204]; Chantilly conference; *Conseil Supérieur de la Défense* and munitions production for 1916 [151205].

1916–(See **France/French Army; Battles of/Verdun**) Minister of War Galliéni sick, resigns and dies [160316]; Joffre gets Nicholas II to launch battle of Narotch to force German

reinforcements out of Verdun; proves terrible failure for Russian army [160318]; *Loi du Pain national* [160425]; the Cambon-Grey Agreement based on the Sykes-Picot agreement [160516]; Verdun: Fort Vaux lost [160607]; Briand's secret conferences on war policy for MPs [160716]; *fameux discours de Briand* [160919]; The case of Malherbe. How a nest of German spies based in Switzerland spied on French military plans and dispositions with secret agents. Félix Malherbe is caught and executed by the French government. [161008]; recapture of Fort Douaumont is symbolic victory [161024]; Briand et Galliéni perdent confiance en Joffre et déplorent «le pouvoir de Chantilly» [161115]; 950,000 morts en France [161204]; Sarraïl takes Monastir [161209]; Bethmann Hollweg's Peace Offer: an attempt to divide Allies of the Entente; Briand answers contemptuously; [161212,6]; *Lyautey: officier de l'armée coloniale d'Afrique, rappelé par Briand pour devenir Ministre de la Guerre après la mort de Galliéni; intervient dans les pouvoirs du GQG de Joffre, prend intérêt à Nivelle*; Foch loses his job as Army Group Commander! [161214,7]; *reprise totale de Verdun; 11,000 prisonniers et 115 canons pris; pertes totales de 700,000 hommes* [161215]; Wilson's offer to mediate in Dec 1916: asks all parties to state their war aims; Colonel House involved [161220]; Joffre named *Maréchal de France* and Nivelle promoted to Commander of the French Forces on the Western Front [161226].

1917–(See **France/French Army; Battles of/Chemin des Dames; Nivelle; Joffre; Foch**) Delegates Doumergue and Gen

Castelnau at St. Petersburg conference [170119]; Nivelle has to face criticism for his stance, continuing after the retreat of the Germans of up to 20 miles on a 100-mile front; his French army group commanders and Haig want the op cancelled; French Assembly gets involved in forcing Nivelle to change his plan; his offer of resignation on 18 March [170318]; the Nivelle affair erupts in French *Assemblée* and the Briand government is toppled; new government formed by Ribot; Painlevé becomes Minister of War; difficulties in sustaining Nivelle as CinC [170319]; *Le 5 avril, Président Poincaré, le premier ministre Ribot, le ministre de la Guerre Painlevé, et certains généraux d'état-major, vont implorer Nivelle, au GQG de Compiègne, pour que, en considération de la déclaration de guerre imminente des États-Unis et de la critique énorme qui se dresse contre son plan, Nivelle interrompe sa campagne déjà commencée dans le nord; il offre sa démission que le Haut Commandement se refuse d'accepter* [170405]; controversy in Salonica [170419]; the abysmal failure of the Nivelle offensive, particularly in the French sector (see **Battle of/Chemin des dames** and **Casualties**); the «Force Noire» of French Colonial Africa («Senegalese» and «Zouaves») involved in fighting; casualties [170424]; Conference of Paris: humiliated and demoralized by the recent devastating failures, attempting to rebuild [170504]; Pétain named CinC of French armies [170516]; *La France reçoit les Polonais volontaires pour une armée polonaise en formation* [170604]; the 'Yankee Boats' dispatched rapidly after American Declaration of War to support French coastal protection [170605]; Greece joins the Entente [170612]; London bombed by flight of Gothas; worse yet [170613]; the so-called mutinies; Pétain's generous policy [170624]; first «*Sammies*» arrive in Saint-Nazaire [170626]; Pétain and Foch in agreement; Foch's centralizing principles not yet accepted [170627]; Cadorna's request to France and Great Britain for divisions and guns to finish off the Austrians-Hungarians in Italy; favorable responses by Pétain and Foch [170715]; Clemenceau publishes a devastating criticism of the Ribot government; Radical socialist minister Malvy seen as protecting interests of labour to the detriment of the army [170722]; Paris conference where Italians and French do not see eye-to-eye; Italians are determined to gain ground against Austria and do nothing else [170725]; the great Socialist conference of Stockholm; a seed of things to come in Europe [170811]; China declares war to Germany and Austria-Hungary

[170814]; PM Ribot resigns over Minister of the Interior's errors; he is replaced by Paul Painlevé, his Minister of War [170907]; execution of Mata Hari [171016]; Caporetto: Foch must go to the rescue; 40 trains a day for Italy [171028]; Minister of Munitions Churchill behind the creation of Allied Maritime Transport Council (AMTC) to coordinate shipping among Allied nations; crucial step in prioritizing munitions transport; key step in creation of more Allied agencies for central coordination of assets [171104]; The Rapallo Conference, Italy; agreement for the creation of Supreme War Council in Versailles with high civilian government representatives; Lloyd George's influence in the Rapallo Convention [171105]; Replacement of Painlevé as prime minister of France; *Clemenceau devient Chef du Cabinet* [171121]; Lenin's «Decree of Peace»; his decision to seek armistice; the army is disbanded and chaos is spreading; the Russians are out of the war! [171126]; criticism of Pétain for being too soft and defensive; his offer of resignation [171213]; «They voted for peace with their feet» – The 15 Dec 1917 Armistice between Russia and the Quadruple Alliance (Germany, Austria-Hungaria, Turkey and Bulgaria); a three-month truce to negotiate a treaty of peace [171215]; Clemenceau confronts Pétain over his reforms and defensive posture [171218]; Pétain's *Directive No 4* [171222]; Guillaumat replace Sarraïl à Salonica [171223]; consideration of consequence of Russian armistice (see **Supreme Council**) [171225];

1918– (See **Battles of/Kaiserschlacht** and **/Last Hundred Days**) Wilson's «Fourteen Points» speech: the death sentence of two empires [180108]; Clemenceau, Foch and Pétain: deadlock on the strategy for the spring [180126,0204]; Foch named in authority to conduct overall control of operations in France in the name of Supreme War Council; national Commanders-in-Chief Pétain, Haig and Pershing, to follow his plans [180403]; the Summit of Abbeville: Foch given additional responsibilities as overall commander of whole Western Front, including Italy; Versailles planning staff transferred to his HQ; Pershing agrees to transport of troops over materiel [180502]; Renault on strike; metal workers protest during fortnight against war policy [180522]; feat of arms by the African troops 'Sénégalais' at Merfy [180529]; Battle of *Friedensturm*: in the middle of Op BLÜCHER, Ludendorff asks Chancellor von Hertling to initiate a false offer of peace to give time to recover and alter political context to the favor of the Central Powers [180603]; Clemenceau, spurred by Pres. Poincaré, goes to see Pétain with the intention of firing him for being too soft; conversation turns and Pétain is kept with clear orders to go on an aggressive offensive [180610]; *finances de guerre: emprunt chez les Américains* [180816]; Germany and Austria send diplomatic notes to Pres. Wilson to ask to arbitrate negotiations for armistice on lines of 14-Point principles; German government tries to impress with improvised democratic measures to be seen as change from policy; Great Britain and France immediately oppose private arrangements between Germany and USA [181004]; Foch reacts to Pres Wilson's indications that he would like to be mediator for an armistice; in the military committee of the Supreme War Council he makes it clear that the military authorities of the Allies will have to be involved in ensuring that the Central Powers, if they want an armistice, will have to relinquish the arms that make them capable of renewing war; this includes land, sea and air material of war [181008]; Foreign Affairs ministers at Versailles tell Wilson that he must consult before any initiative taken in regard to armistice; his views do not correspond to those of nations involved in the war since the start [181009];

Ministries:

Foreign Office:

Sykes-Picot Agreement on post-War Middle-East [160402]; how the agreement signed by members of respective Foreign Office were made without consultations with their diplomats and politicians in Middle East, after Arabs had

changed their views due to the failures of the Dardanelles and Alexandretta campaigns, and carried on influenced from high officials in London. International recognition of the agreement proved an error that changed the course of the following century. [160204,0202];

French-Austrian relations. (See **Austria-Hungary**) The secret peace initiative to France by Prince Sixtus of Bourbon-Parma [161205]; end of secret Bourbon Parma mission to France; French conditions; no possible peace agreement [170306];

Armed Services:

French Army:

1914–Plan XVII [140805]; (See **Battle of/Frontiers**); Seven German armies facing five French armies deployed in defence under Plan XVII [140805]; The loss of Laon (map); advantage of French GHQ near Paris [140902]; Crossing of the Marne [140902]; (See **Battles of/Marne**) (5-11 Sep 1914); description [140905]; (See **Battles of/Race to the Sea**); Foch au Groupe d'armées nord [141004]; Arras; Vimy; Lorette; Souchez; Givenchy, Mercatel, Monchy-le-Preux, Pas de Calais [141004]; Foch as Joffre's deputy; French-Foch meeting in Doullens [141010]; (See **Battles of/Flanders**); Foch at Ypres, defence of Dixmude-Nieuport [141026]; flooding [141028]; last battle of the Yser [141111]; Joffre's December Plan [141214]; Arras [141217]; Champagne [141220];

1915– (See **Battles of/Artois and Champagne**) Plans de Joffre pour 'grignoter' en 1915; importance des chemins de fer; Aisne et Champagne [150217]; conflict in strategy in France between Joffre, Foch and French [150307]; Plan for Artois 1915 [150504]; Aubers Ridge; Vimy; Arras [150509-10]; diversion at Serre [150605]; Gen Gouraud wounded at Gallipoli [150630]; Joffre forced to send four divisions to Salonica [150830]; *conférence de Calais; Joffre et le renfort pour Salonica [150911]; conférence de Chantilly pour op automne 1915 en Champagne et Artois; Saillant de Noyon'* [150914]; the consequences of Bulgaria's treaty with Triple Alliance; reinforcement of Salonica in Fall of 1915 [150924]; *faillite des op Artois et Champagne* [150927]; Joffre's opportunistic turnabout in favor of Dardanelles [151018]; Viviani 'Union Sacrée' government toppled; Aristide Briand takes over with new ideas on *Conseil Supérieur de Défense*, brings in Gallieni, teamwork with Président Poincaré [151026]; on the Adrian soldiers' helmet [151027]; Discussion Joffre-Foch on new principles and options in the Somme for 1916 [151110]; Gas attacks [151126]; Joffre's Chantilly conference; munitions as the key 1916 issue; concerted offensives on all major fronts; central coordination [151205,7];

1916– Evacuation of all French forces from Gallipoli on New Year's Day 1916 [160107]; Sarraïl under Joffre in Salonica [160111]; Joffre visits Verdun [160219]; (See **Battles of/Verdun**). Capitaine de Gaulle prisonnier [160302]; batailles simultannées de Mort-homme et Douaumont; Fortress of Vaux [160307-8]; attrition [160309]; Kitchener and Robertson involved in convincing Haig that relief must be provided for Verdun in form of diversionary attack [160328]; *arrivée d'une brigade russe en France (Gen Lokhvitsky)* [160420]; Second Army in Verdun, rotation of other armies [160507]; French reduction in the Somme plan [160519]; Joffre and Haig agree on 1st July [160527]; harsh discipline [160611]; Joffre announces the Somme offensive to Verdun troops [160612]; battle for Fleury in Verdun; phosgene gas introduced; Nivelle's «*ils ne passeront pas!*» [160623]; immediate effect of opening bombardments in Somme on Verdun Germans [160626]; *Le Canon de 75 - Ubiquitous but light* [160821]; recapture of Fort Douaumont at Verdun is symbolic victory [161024]; victory at Verdun (See **Verdun**); Lyautey brought in by Briand to diminish authority of Joffre on military strategy; dismissal of Foch (see **Lyautey, Foch, Nivelle, Joffre**); the misery of the cold winter of 1916-1917 [170323].

1917–Foch-Cadorna consultation for potential invasion of Switzerland by Germanic Alliance and ensuing threats to France and Italy [170408]; See **Battles of/Chemin des Dames** (aka Third Battle Champagne or Second battle of the Aisnes). proves a horrific defeat [170416,21,4]; French Schneider et Saint-Chamond tanks show interesting success in Plateau de Laffaux [170505]; end of the Nivelle Offensive; total losses of quarter million men in 23 days! [170509]; Soldiers start to go on strikes, asking for leave and rest; no violence [170511]; Pétain's *Directive No. 1* to address immediate requirements; he has no intent to go on the offensive until the Americans are in France [170519]; *Directive No 3: établit les nouvelles disposition pour la récupération, le changement de culture, et le repos des armées* [170704]; une nouvelle opération à Verdun assurée de succès pour remonter le moral [170826]; *Pétain et la bataille de Malmaison* [171018]; *Pétain's Directive No 4: défense mobile en profondeur* [171222].

1918–Note 12 of SWC recommends centralization of reserves to the C-in-Cs of the French theatre; Haig and Pétain do not respond well [180122]; *mise au point sérieuse entre Pétain et Foch sur la notion de réserves communes entre les armées nationales en France; Pétain s'y oppose et empêche même Foch de travailler sur de tels plans* [180125]; See Op MICHAEL (21 Mar-5 Apr 1918). On 20 May 1918, Foch senses that the Germans are overextended and vulnerable; he orders advances in all armies of the Allied Front in France, with priorities around Amiens and Béthune [180520]; the French armies have now pushed the German armies in Champagne to the line where they started the advance; Pétain has now won the Second Battle of the Marne; not less important than the first one; from now on, the Germans will withdraw constantly until the end of the war; April 4 marks the beginning of the Last Hundred Days [180802]; For operations between 4 Aug and 11 Nov 1918, see **Battles of/Last Hundred Days**; see also **Supreme War Council**.

Field Armies:

First Army:The loss of Laon (map) [140902]; Battle of the Marne (5-11 Sep 1914); description [140905];

Second Army: Gen Castelnau. The loss of Laon (map) [140902]; Nancy and Grand Couronné [140903]; Battle of the Marne [140905]; reconstructed for the Race to the Sea [140920]; First Somme [140927]; *Première Bataille d'Artois* [141001]; *Pétain; offensive du 'Saillant de Noyon', automne 1915* [150914]; Start at Verdun [160221];

Third Army:The loss of Laon (map) [140902]; Battle of the Marne [140905];

Fourth Army: Gen Langle de Cary. Gen Ruffey. Bataille des Frontières [140819]; *Regroupement* [140827]; Battle of the Marne [140905]; Champagne; helping the Russians [141220]; *offensive du 'Saillant de Noyon', automne 1915* [150914];

Fifth Army: Initial position [140805]; Gen. Lanzerac [140811]; Joffre envoi vers Sambre et Meuse [140815]; se rend [140819]; *Premiers signes de déséquilibre dans les armées allemandes du nord* [140820]; Opportunity missed by northern armies [140821]; Lanzerac's Battle for survival [140822]; BEF covers flank at Mons [140823]; *Regroupement* [140827]; The loss of Laon (map) [140902]; Marne [140905];

Sixth Army: Gen Manoury. *Regroupement* [140827]; *Création* [140901, 3]; at the Ourcq River [140907]; Fayolle in First Day of the Somme [160709];

Ninth Army: Creation [140903];

Tenth Army: Gen Maudd'huy. *Création; Première Bataille d'Artois* [141001]; *Corps de D'Urbal* [141004]; d'Hurbal; organization for Artois campaign of 1915 [150504]

ARMY CORPS:

IX Corps [141112];

XVII Corps Tenth; Artois 1915 [150504]

XX Corps Tenth; Artois 1915 [150504]

XXI Corps:Tenth; Artois 1915 [150504]

XXIII Corps: (Pétain) Tenth; Artois 1915 [150504]

DIVISIONS:

42 Div with Belgium army [141026];

Troupes Territoriales: Entre Arras et la Manche [141001];

Marine: In port ready to defend [140731]; China Fleet [140921]; *les fusiliers marins à Dixmude* [141024]; *Bouvet* blown up and *Gaulois* damaged in Dardanelles raid [150319]; «Yankee Boats» for French coastal protection [170605]; *firm

Air: (See **Aircraft development; Garros**) [150418]; aerial bombardment [150625]; *les aérostats et cerfs-volants d'observation de l'aviation française* [151128]; 'Chasseurs' squadrons extend operations out to seek and destroy enemy aircraft in the air or on the ground [160207]; *début des opérations de bombardement d'aéroports (Habsheim (Alsace)* [160319]; *la Fusée Le Prieur*: anti-balloon rockets [160522]; death of beloved air ace Albert Ball, 20 years old, 44 victories [170506]; Georges Guynemer, As pilote de 53 victoires; escadrille des Cigognes, tué à 22 ans [170911];

Social aspects of the war: *Fusillés pour l'exemple* [151103]; *Héroïne de France, Émilienne Moreau* [151127]; *écrivain Apollinaire blessé, meurt novembre 1918* [160317]; *exécution de Gabrielle Petit, héroïne de la Résistante* [160401]; *campus de travail forcés en agriculture pour 25,000 jeunes Français* [160422]; *loi du pain national impose recette de «pain gris complet»* [160424]; *démoralisation et pessimisme* [160501]; *les journaux de tranchées pour le moral* [160526]; the execution of Herduin and Millant; «l'affaire des fusillés de Fleury» [160611]; Movement for the increase of influence of women in society; Maurice Barrès' *Chronique de la Grande Guerre* [161225]; *Weekend? Pourquoi? les Gueules cassées – ils veulent rire!* [170924]; *l'importance du vin au moral* [171008]; *accident ferroviaire* [171212]; Anthelme Mangin, le Voyageur sans Bagages [180201]; The Spanish Flu: starts in the summer of 1918 with a first wave of severe symptoms that necessitate hospitalization; the second wave of 1919 will kill some fifty million people across the world [180801]; retour de la bière [180815];]

(End of FRANCE)

Franchet D'Esperey, Gen. French. Corps Commander. Brilliant in Marne [140903];

Francoeur, Joseph-Napoléon. Canada. Québec MP famous for the Francoeur Motion, made in Québec parliament, advocating separation of the province from Canada, following insults made in Toronto to French Canadians over Conscription, [180130];

François, Von. German Gen in East Front. Success against Russians [140824];

French Canadians. In Second Division, contemplated brigade [150811]; the Ontario Regulation 17 Affair; Diane and Béatrice Deloges's campaign; [150912]; Laurier on Regulation 17 [160510]; End of year 1916 report on fall in recruitment; Borden blames French Canadians; truth is that British-born men are all gone, Canadians as a whole are much less interested [161231]; General Nivelle's visit to Vimy and the report of «Sinn-Feinism» in Québec [170216]; France's appeals for help from French Canadians [170812];

French, General John. Commander of BEF [140806]; *À Paris pour rencontrer Joffre* [140815]; Visits Lanzerac [140818]; Meeting Joffre [140829]; Kitchener's visit in France [140831]; end of Race to the Sea [141119]; conflict in strategy in France between Joffre, Foch and French [150307]; at Second Ypres; holds too long [150427]; Resignation of FM John French [151206];

G

Galliéni, General Joseph. France. Brought in as Minister of War by Briand, to form *Conseil Supérieur de la Défense nationale*, to screen

military strategy. [151026]; superb administrator, becomes sick and resigns to die in May 1916 [160316];

Gandhi, Mohandas Karamchand. Returns from South Africa to Bombay, India [150110]; Gandhi supports enlistment in Indian army to see Britain win the War [180714];

Garros, Roland. France. *Pilote. Héro national d'aviation civile; fait prisonnier* [150418];

Gass, Clare. Canadian Nurse. Diary [150506]

Geddes, Sir Eric. British railroad executive hired by Lloyd George for Ministry of Munitions, subsequently put in charge of British railroads in France and Controller of Shipping, showing genius for organization; Lloyd George appoints as First Lord of Admiralty, replacing Edward Carson, in June 1917, to implement the convoy system, already showing amazing results [170716]; PM dismisses Jellicoe on Christmas Eve; Geddes carries the humiliating letter [171224];

Geddes, Baron, Sir Auckland Campbell, Minister of National Service. Holds National Conference of 350 representatives of Labour Unions at Westminster to negotiate 250,000 more men for the services. His success was a key factor in victory [180119];

GERMANY

Royalty: Wilhelm II as monarch (See **Hohenzollern**); Henry of Prussia as negotiator with King George V [140726]; Kaiser spends 800,000 Marks to convince Mexican Pancho Villa to attack Columbus, New Mexico; Wilson sends Pershing with 10,000 men [160310]; Wilhelm's meeting with Karl of Austria-Hungary in Apr 1917 on the question of negotiations for peace; «—I long for peace, but I cannot beg for it.» [170404]; The Kaiser's Easter Egg [170407]; Delusions of 1917-1918 See **Battles of Kaiserschlacht**)

Government:

1914— (See **Battles of/Frontiers, /Race to the Sea, /Flanders; Ludendorf; Falkenhayn; Hindenburg**) Declared State of Imminent War; orders to War Stations [140731]; declaration of War on Russia [140802]; strategic dilemma [141127];

1915— The issue of Egypt [141128]; Navigation Laws [150130]; Ottoman-German operation against Suez Canal [150203]; Unrestricted Submarine Warfare becomes active [150218]; Fall of Warsaw; offer to Russia of 'cheap peace' [150805]; sinking of *Arabic* forces Kaiser to cut down USW; Chancellor Bethmann adamant that US must not be brought into the War; resignation of Adm. von Pohl and Adm. Bachmann; new CNS Holtzendorff's withdrawal of subs from Channel; interruption of USW Sep 15 Jan 1916 [150920]; on the production of the German soldiers' helmet, replacing the *pickelhelm* [151027]; secret contacts with Belgium rep to discuss eventual association [151129]; differences between Falkenhayn and Bethmann on USW [151211];

1916— The Von Papen affair [160115]; Colonel House meets German government to discuss Wilson mediation [160215]; severe division of views in German High Command on USW; Kaiser decides that Chancellor has three months to sort out diplomatic solution; Tirpitz resigns on postponement [160306]; Chancellor involved in diplomatic row after American loss of lives in U-Boat torpedoing of *Sussex* in Channel; [160327] [160324]; US threat of cutting diplomatic relations [160418]; blockade tightened, sinkings not equal to Allied ship construction; «absolute contraband» becomes all-encompassing [160419]; FM Goltz dies in Baghdad [160420]; Falkenhayn and the precarious management of forces between West-East-Balkans-Middle East-Africa [160820]; Declaration of War to German Empire by Italy and Romania shows diminishing prospects of Quadruple Alliance [160827-8]; State Conference of Spa; Falkenhayn discredited — HINDENBURG AND LUDENDORFF TO ASSUME FUNCTIONS OF CHIEF OF IMPERIAL GENERAL STAFF AND QUARTER-MASTER GENERAL — in reality, a military regime is now in place [160829]; conclusion that if Germany succeeds in sinking 600,000 tons of British shipping per month for six months, Britain will surrender for peace [160902]; «Restricted» submarine warfare [161006];

Hindenburg enacts the Auxiliary Service Law, transforming German society into a military dictatorship by forcing all men to be at the disposal of the State for any duty in industry or in the military service; ministers are dismissed and replaced with appointees of the Dictator, fully endorsed by the Kaiser [161104]; Chancellor Bethmann Hollweg's memorandum on Germany's war aims; has to deal with Hindenburg who does not agree with much of the view expressed [161114]; Bethmann Hollweg's Peace Offer: an attempt to divide Allies of the Entente; answer by PM Briand [161212,6]; Wilson's offer to mediate in Dec 1916: asks all parties to state their war aims; Colonel House involved [161220]; PM's defiant response to German offer of peace [161212,21];

1917— Little results from the American offer of mediation; US Amb. to Berlin James W. Gerard, makes a statement meant to convey American impartiality to the German government; the golden opportunity not taken [170106]; the fateful conference of Pless; decision on full USW (Unrestricted submarine Warfare) for 1st Feb 1917 [170108,13]; Wilson's famous speech to the Nations at War remembered for «Peace Without Victory»; exhorting halt in hostilities and diplomatic negotiations on equal footing [170122]; «Turnip Winter» is the worse of the war for food shortages and suffering due to deep cold [170125]; Zimmermann telegram released to the press; U-Boat sinking of SS *Algonquin*; Lansing announces that American merchant ships will be protected by armed guards [170312]; A Reichstag inter-party committee declares intent to discuss resolution expressing readiness to negotiate for a peace without forced annexations [170702]; in early July 1917, Wilson decrees an embargo on all 'neutral' exports going out of US for countries neighbouring Germany; wants each to justify needs for food [170709]; Chancellor Bethmann Hollweg, marginalized by military dictatorship, resigns over vote franchise in Prussia; replaced by Georg Michaelis [170714]; Michaelis, Undersecretary of State in Prussian administration, brought up by conservative dictatorship, although with no experience in foreign affairs. Immediately kills the inter-party committee of the Reichstag working on resolution for war aims negotiations [170714]; Michaelis' censure of moderates in Reichstag on 19 Jul 1917; Lloyd George's reply to the speech [170719,21]; sailors of the High Seas Fleet protest at being kept idle and badly fed; beginning of significant communist influence in Europe [170802]; the great Socialist conference of Stockholm; a seed of things to come in Europe [170811]; China declares war to Germany and Austria-Hungary [170814]; Chancellor Michaelis replaced by Georg von Hertling; represents waning influence of civilian parliament wanting to return to civilian diplomacy in light of abysmal relations with Italy and Russia [171101]; Meeting of the German General Staff at Mons; planning the Spring offensive [171111]; first negotiations at Brest-Litovsk; Trotsky as head of Russian delegation; wants a treaty of peace «without annexations or reparations» as conceived by Wilson; Central Powers take advantage of the pause to reinforce the West [171203]; the case of Finland; separating from Russia [171205]; «They voted for peace with their feet» — The 15 Dec 1917 Armistice between Russia and the Quadruple Alliance (Germany, Austria-Hungaria, Turkey and Bulgaria); a three-month truce to negotiate a treaty of peace [171215];

1918—Finland demands and gets Independence [180104]; Trotsky at Brest Litovsk; Lenin at St. Petersburg: the creation of the Red Army [180105]; Wilson's «Fourteen Points» speech: the death sentence of two empires [180108]; In Brest Litovsk, Ukraine agrees to become 'exclusive protectorate' for Germany in exchange for sham 'independence and sovereignty'; Germany is carving Russia into a rump, one province at a time [180209]; Spring offensive plans being put together target British in priority; Ludendorff; Op *Kaiserschlacht* has 50% of German divisions on narrower British Front; two phases: I-Somme, II-Flanders [180213]; Banging the table at Brest Litovsk: Central Powers go back on the offensive and invade parts of Russia

almost without opposition; Baltic countries are carved out of the Russian sphere [180218]; Wilhelm and Karl discuss prospects of war [180222]; Pres. Wilson: from Fourteen Points to Four Principles; Chancellor von Hertling replies [180225]; Trotsky compelled to sign the Treaty of Brest Litovsk; enormous spoils to the winners; unprecedented humiliations; reduction of Russia to Rump [180303]; the hubris of Brest Litovsk [180313]; Lettonia and Courland fall under German influence [180318]; Start of Operation MICHAEL (See **Battles of/Kaiserschlacht**). In Ukraine, Germans stage a coup d'État [180428]; the Treaty of Bucharest: Romania falls under Central Power control [180508]; Conference of Spa: revelations that Austria-Hungary has been involved in secret dealings with Allies [180512]; Conference of Dusseldorff where German industrialists put pressure on High Command to foster massive protected exploitation of resources in eastern Europe, particularly Russia and Ukraine [180516]; *Op Friedensturm*: Ludendorff asks Chancellor von Hertling to initiate a false offer of peace to give time to recover and alter political context to the favor of the Central Powers [180603]; the last conference of the Great Crown Council at «Neubois», in Spa; basking in unbounded optimism [180703]; after his «Fourteen Points» of 8 Jan 1918, his «Four Principles» of 11 Feb, his speech on «Four Ends» of 4 Jul, rings a bell around the world; the timing is good; German diplomats understand that there is something there for them [180704]; German ambassador to Moscow killed [180707]; the six demands of the German Government on Poland; a fatuous shopping list [180708]; an understatement on Belgium; Hindenburg and Ludendorff on the morrow of the retreat of the German armies in Champagne: gloomy; **First Day of the Last Hundred Days** [180804]; Discussions in Berlin, in light of withdrawals in France, of the prospects of keeping territories gained in the Brest Litovsk Peace Accord with Russia; counting on Europe's need to have a buffer zone of controlled countries, including Poland, to contain a Russian rump of International Communism [180905]; [Day 43]; German High Command decide that they are beaten; inform FM von Hintze that he must now start diplomatic initiatives to protect the German Army and keep as much as possible of the conquered territories; posturing begins [180930]; handover of German reins of power to civilian government; new Chancellor appointed by Wilhelm II, second cousin **Maximilian Prince of Baden**, tasked to negotiate in terms of President Wilson's «Four Principles to End the War», ensuring that the Hohenzollern dynasty remains on the throne [181003]; Germany and Austria send diplomatic notes to Pres. Wilson to ask to arbitrate negotiations for armistice on lines of 14-Point principles; German government tries to impress with improvised democratic measures to be seen as change from policy; Great Britain and France immediately oppose private arrangements between Germany and USA [181004]; Foreign Affairs ministers at Versailles tell Wilson that he must consult before any initiative taken in regard to armistice; his views do not correspond to those of nations involved in the war since the start [181009]; recent sinking by U-Boats of merchant vessels jeopardize the Central Powers negotiations for peace; German Navy told to stop sinking merchant vessels [181010];

Ministries:

Foreign Office: Relations with Turkey [140722]; diplomatic attempts with Japan [160520]; Wilson's speech on mediation; rejected in both Great Britain and Germany [160527]; draft of friendly treaty with Afghanistan meets 'masterly inactivity' by Afghan ruler Emir Habibullah Khan [160616]; von Jagow replaced by Zimmermann at the Foreign Ministry [161104]; in the flurry of secret offers of peace initiatives, von den Lancken's policy paper outlining to the Kaiser's government that, as Tirpitz had made clear earlier, «Belgium remains the kernel of Germany's war aim policy in the west.» [150508][161210]; as governments respond to Wilson's request for their war aims, it becomes more evident that

complete victory or defeat are the only possible outcome; no point of conciliation can be found [170110]; German Amb. to Washington hands in letter announcing resumption of Unrestricted Submarine Warfare on February 1st, 1917. [170131]; Michaelis as new Chancellor, has no experience in foreign affairs [170714]; Pope's offer of mediation [170801]; China declares war to Germany and Austria-Hungary [170814]; Kühlmann's diplomatic probing [171021]; Georg von Hertling as new Chancellor, represents Parliament's desire for return to civilian diplomacy in light of abysmal relations with Italy (Caporetto) and Russia (workers' revolution) [171101];

Armed Services:

Imperial Navy: Mobilisation [140725]; East Asia Squadron; Tirpitz' resignation; replaced by Adm von Capelle as Sec of State for Navy [160313]; Declaration of London (1909) repudiated by British government on grounds of blockade shortcomings for control of neutrals [160707]; the fateful conference of Pless; decision on USW for 1st Feb 1917 [170108,13]; German naval attacks of Ramsgate, Margate, Goodwind Sands, damages to HMS *Paragon* and HMS *Llewellyn* [170317]; the naval battle of the strait of Otrante [170515]; sailors of the High Seas Fleet protest at being kept idle; two sailors executed; beginning of significant communist influence in Europe [170802]; Hospital ship Guilford Castle attacked by U-55 [180310];

High Seas Fleet: Does not move from ports except for small coastal bombardment and laying of minefields; see **Ships** [140816]; bombardment of Yarmouth from exit of German ports, Holigoland, by ships from North Sea ports Wilhelmshaven, Bremenhaven, Cuxhaven and Emden [141102]; Tirpitz' views on grand strategy [141115]; shore bombardments of Scarborough, Whitby and Hartlepool [141216]; Adm Sheer appointed CinC of High Seas Fleet; intent to use in conjunction with submarine force [160118]; how submarine protection for raids on British coast set network of minefields in North Sea that prevented the HSF from ever coming out again [160819];

Submarine Service: U-9 [140922]; Preparing for Unrestricted Submarine Warfare (USW); warning to states on 4 Feb 1915 [150218]; American protest [150206]; activated [150218]; U-124 sinks French *Falaba* [150329]; Sinking of *Arabic*; consequences to USW; Interruption of German USW; pause 20 Sep 1915 to January 1916 [150920]; under the influence of Tirpitz, «Intensified submarine warfare» against armed merchant shipping is resumed; prelude to full USW [160229]; damaging of S.S. *Sussex* by UB-29 in Channel with loss of American lives enrages US public opinion; stiff diplomatic exchanges follow with Germany [160324]; 1,4mt of British shipping sunk [160419]; British coastal raids, laying of minefields, and self-inflicted paralysis [160819]; aiming at 600,000 tons of shipping per month; all-out raiding British commerce; [160902]; this will be confirmed by Runciman's warning (unknown to Germans) to British Government [161110]; long-range cruiser submarines: U-53's friendly visit to Newport, Rhodes Island, Significant threat for Canada [161002]; return to «Restricted» submarine warfare, meaning focus on military ships and «prize rules» against commercial shipping, with inspections for contraband and escape for passengers and crew [161006]; Zimmermann telegram released to the press; U-Boat sinking of SS *Algonquin*; Lansing announces that American merchant ships will be protected by armed guards [170312]; 78 of 100 submarines launched in 1917 have been eliminated; not only has their efficiency diminished, but in early 1918, their survival is compromised, particularly because of immense minefields that have been set in key areas [180102]; U-151: cruiser submarine on the rampage along US coast; sinks 6 ships in single Black Sunday [180524,0602]; U-151 replaced by U-156 after having

made 23 sinkings for 61,000 tons; diminishing returns of U-140, U-117, U-155, U-152, and U-139 [180616]; the tragedy of the *Llandoverly Castle* sunk by U-86 with loss of 234 lives, including 14 nurses [180627];

Commerce Raiding. East Asia Squadron involved in commerce raiding in Pacific, Adm von Spee; *Scharnhorst*, *Gneisenau*, *Emden*, *Nürnberg*, *Leipzig*; attack at Papete [140921]; See **Battles of/Coronel**, **/Falklands** [141206];]

SHIPS:

Blücher. Dogger Bank [150123];

Breslau. Mediterranean chase [140810]; *B.* and *Goeben* cross Bosphorus into Black Sea, threatening Sebastopol and Odessa [141027]; Op as Turkish *Midilli* in Black Sea [141103];

Derflinger. Dogger Bank [150123];

Dresden. Light cruiser. Last of East Asia Squadron; destroyed [150314];

Emden. Dresden Class. East Asia Squadron [140921]; light cruiser; in South America [141006]; destroyed [141109];

Gneisenau. East Asia Squadron; Papete [140921]; armoured cruiser [141006]; in South America; lost in Falklands [141207];

Goeben. Mediterranean chase [140810]; *Breslau* and *G.* cross Bosphorus into Black Sea, threatening Sebastopol and Odessa [141027]; Op as Turkish *Javus* in Black Sea [141103]; [141212];

Königsberg Light cruiser. Destroyed in Rufiji R., Tanzania [150711];

Leipzig East Asia Squadron. light cruiser; in South America [141006]; lost in Falklands [141207];

Magdeburg. [150123];

Moltke. Dogger Bank [150123];

Nürnberg. East Asia Squadron; Papete; [140921]; light cruiser; in South America [141006];

Scharnhorst. East Asia Squadron; Papete [140921]; armoured cruiser ; in South America [141006]; lost in Falklands [141207];

Seydlitz. Dogger bank [150123];

Von Der Tan. Dogger Bank [150123];

German Aviation: Imperial German Air Service; See **Aircraft development**. The 'Fokker Scourge' of 1915; superiority in fighter effectiveness [150903]; *premier avion en métal* Junker J1 Blechesel [151212]; loss of ace pilot 'Blue Max' Immermann [160618]; death of Ace Pilot Oswald Boelcke, [161028]; London bombed by flight of Gothas; worse yet [170613];

German Army:

1914– (See **Battles of/Frontiers**, **/Marne**, **/Race to the Sea**; **Moltke**; **Ludendorff**; **Hindenburg**; **Falkenhayn**) *Oulans en Belgique*; *Grand Quartier Général in Coblenz*: **OHL** - *Oberste Heeresleitung* (Supreme Army Command) false assessment [140827]; Marne [140905,9]; Race to the Sea (17 Sep-17Nov 1914) [140910, 4]; Falkenhayn moves GHQ to Charleville and Mezière; reorganization of High Command [140914]; abandonment of annihilation [140915]; The Falkenhayn Plan [141011]; Battle of Poland (Warsaw); Falkenhayn and Hindenburg [141019]; Langemark; new Reserve Army Corps for Ypres; (20-31 October 1914) [141025]; Fabek Group. Ad hoc German formation (army) in Ypres salient at Gheluvelt; aims to cross Lys and Yser [141029]; renewed Falkenhayn offensive against Ypres (5-11 Nov) [141106]; last battle of Yser [141111]; digging in for the winter; siege warfare [141112]; Mackensen IX Army surrounded in the East [141113]; Falkenhayn's strategic choices, High Command; Tirpitz and Hindenburg [141115]; Goltz' views [141118]; end of Race to the Sea [141119];

1915– (See **Battles of/Artois and Champagne**; **Mackensen**) poison gas research [150131]; battles of Mansuria Lakes [150213];

Falkenhayn's influence on change in army tactics in the East; success [150502]; 172 German divisions in Europe [150803]; Fall of Warsaw [150805]; FM Mackensen given new Front in Balkans to subdue Serbia and re-establish Constantinople railway [150930]; Mackensen's success against Serbia [151120]; Von Goltz in Kut [151225];

1916 – (See **Battles of/Verdun**). Attrition as an aim [160309]; effects of opening on Somme on Verdun logistics [160627]; (See **Battle of/ Somme**): Class of 1917 (born in 1897, turning 19 year old) is beginning to appear in the Somme; class of 1918 (expected for Christmas at 18 [160923]; decisions by Hindenburg-Ludendorff on organization and tactics 'in depth' on Western Front; differ from Falkenhayn's principles of a stiff forward defence [160905]; In Romania, Romanians being forced SE by Mackensen's Quadruple Alliance army group, and by Hungarians defences in N. (map) [160913];

1917– (see **Battles of/Arras**, **/Chemins des Dames**; **Nivelle**) the Great Hindenburg retreat: German armies on the Arras-Somme Front suddenly withdraw to the Siegfried (aka Hindenburg) Line [1702]; scorched earth in the German retreat to the Hindenburg Line [170314]; the new circumstances of the three German armies behind the Hindenburg Line [170320]; the misery of the cold winter of 1916-1917 [170323]; Minister of War, Kerensky ordered Brusilov to initiate an immediate attack in Galicia; improvised and half-hearted attack on 1st July 1917 is followed by a devastating German counter attack run by brilliant Max Hoffmann; Russian army demoralized for good [170701]; Colonel Lossberg's defence in depth in Flanders [170803]; Hindenburg's political propaganda against foreign influence and socialist ideas [170804]; Caporetto: German- Austrian-Hungarian operation with reinforcements has tremendous success with horrific loss of Italian personnel (265,000 captures with 3,000 guns [171024]; Italian retreat to Tagliamento and Piave rivers [171026];

1918– (See **Battles of/Kaiserschlacht**) The Battle of Cambrai; a first massive use of British tanks (476); their incomplete victory [171120]; Ludendorff's planning of Spring offensive; op MICHAEL [180121]; Ludendorff brings Bruchmüller from the East for the Spring Offensive [180217]; massive transfer of troops from the East to the Western Front [180223]; Estonia declares independence with German support [180224]; Op MICHAEL (21 Mar-5 Apr 1918). numbers of German prisoners indicative of demoralization [180611];

For operations between 4 Aug and 11 Nov 1918, see **Battles of/Last Hundred Days**
Field Armies:

First German Army. Von Kluck. Battle of the Frontiers [140818]; Fr. Premiers signes de déséquilibre dans les armées françaises du nord [140820]; Opportunity missed by northern armies [140821]; BEF at Mons [140823]; Villers-Cotterêts et Compiègne [140901];

Second German Army. Von Bülow. Battle of the Frontiers [140818]; Fr. Premiers signes de déséquilibre dans les armées françaises du nord [140820]; Opportunity missed by northern armies [140821]; Losing track in Marne [140907];

Third German Army. Hausen, Battle of the Frontiers [140818]; [140819]; Opportunity missed by northern armies [140821]; Lanzerac's Battle for survival [140822];

Fourth German Army. Albrecht. Fr. avance vers Sedan [140819]; new 4th in Ypres with new Reserve army corps [141025]; flooding Yser [141028];

Fifth German Army. Prince Royal. En Lorraine [140819]; at Verdun in August 1916, Prince vs CoS over Falkenhayn's leadership [160826];

Sixth German Army: First Somme [140927]; Première Bataille d'Artois; Arras [141001]; new 6th in Ypres with new Reserve army corps [141025];

Eighth German Army. Gen Prittwitz. In Konigsberg, Prussia [140817]; Success in Stalluponin; defeat at Gumbinnen; Prittwitz replaced by Hindenburg [140824]; Warsaw [141019];

Ninth German Army. Mackensen, Eastern Front; surrounded [141113]; see **Mackensen, Falkenhayn.** Falkenhayn takes command in Sep 1916 [160906];

Tenth German Army. Battle of Mansurian Lakes [150213];

Eleventh German Army Under FM Mackensen in Balkans [150930];

CORPS:

I German Corps. François, Von. Against Russian armies [140817]; *Premiers signes de déséquilibre dans les armées françaises du nord* [140820];

V Bavarian Reserve Corps: At Arras [141005];

Social aspects: King Coal [150712]; Peintre Franz Marc, chef d'école «Le cavalier bleu», tué [160304]; imposition of the low quality «war bread' **Kriegsbrot** which shows the extend of success by Allied blockade [160425]; The Kaiser's Easter Egg; promises of relief that will hatch only after the war is won [170407]; Hindenburg's political propaganda against foreign influence and socialist ideas [170804];

(End of GERMANY)

Ghent. Belgium. Retreat from; taken [141009, 10];

Gieslingen, Baron Von.: Austro-Hungarian ambassador in Belgrade [140719]

Godley, Gen Alexander. Commander New Zealand commander, in Sluvla Bay operation [150808];

Goeben: Chase in Mediterranean; renamed *Jawus* [140810];

Goltz, Gen Colmar Freiherr Von der. Governor of Belgium, then Aide to Sultan in Constantinople. Orientalist; Views on grand strategy; importance of the Middle East [141118]; involved in defence of Mesopotamia; dies in Baghdad [160420];

Gough, Gen Hubert. British. Cavalry officer. Given command of new Reserve Br Army to support Fourth Br Army (Rawlinson) in preparations for Somme; Reserve army becomes Fifth Br Army, in Aug 1916, involved in Somme fighting on the flank of Fourth Br Army. In early Sep 1916, Cdn Corps is sent to Fifth Br Army to relieve exhausted Australians in Pozières; 1 Cdn Div sent to Mouquet Farm to replace 4 Aus Div [160903]; Haig's Flanders' attack to begin; organization of armies: Gough's Fifth moved beside Plumer's Second [170730]; effects of the reorganization of divisions in the defence plans; Fifth Army affected with consequences [1802]; complete dismemberment of Fifth Br Army in German Op MICHAEL (see **Battles of Kaiserschlacht** for operational movements) [180402];

Governor General of Canada: Wires King to inform Canada at War [140804];

Greece. Pro-Allies vs pro-German; PM Venizelos's position vs King Constantine and Queen Sophia; Salonica [150209]; Venizelos offers troops when Dardanelles forts are bombarded; imbroglio with Russia [150304]; fall of government; Constantine V appoints PM Gounaris [150306]; a network of contradictory alliances stressed by failure in Dardanelles [150726]; arrival of reinforcements at Salonica put pressure on Greece to side against Bulgaria; Venizelos resigns because of the King's veto of pro-Allied policy [151003-5]; Offer of Cyprus refused [151016]; Venizelos declares a pro-Allies Provisional Government of Greece, despite being banned by the King; forms a Greek contingent with Salonica Force [161017]; Venizelos declares war to Germany and Bulgaria [161123]; Rupture of the Venizelists becomes an acute division in Greece society after the return of the Serbs to Monastir [161209]; Sarraïl at the Rome Conference: told not to over-publicize the Greek participation to the Salonica Force; American Greek public not happy with schism created by Venizelos' hurry to get into the war [170107]; Conference of Saint-Jean Maurienne; Italian refusal to negotiate with Austro-Hungary [170418]; King Constantine I of Greece, threatened by the Allies in Salonica to push into Greece, abdicates in favor of his second son Alexander;

Venizelos returns to Greece, now formally allied with the Entente [170612]; success on West Vardar against Bulgars; Salonica front greatly helped by definite Hellenic Army action [180530];

GREAT BRITAIN

Royalty. Visit by King George V, Queen Mary and Kitchener in Salisbury Plains [141104] [150205]; King George and the Derby Scheme [151023];

Government

1914– Hankey and Cabinet [140715]; Declaration of War against Germany; full mobilisation of Imperial forces [140804]; *Traité de Londres* [140904]; Declaration of War to Turkey [141105]; oil concerns [141121]; 'Householders' survey of potential manpower in Britain [141122]; Australians and New Zealanders sent to Egypt [141203]; declare Protectorate in Egypt, replace Khedive [141218]; Cabinet Secretariat; Boxing Day Memo by Hankey [141229];

1915– Cabinet adopts Churchill's plan of Dardanelles naval raid [150114]; Churchill's visit to French re. sideshow in Dardanelles [150129]; sending of 6 Br Div to Mesopotamia; creation of Mesopotamia Expeditionary Force (MEF) [150212]; opening of naval fire in Dardanelles [150219]; Asquith's Cabinet decides on land forces for Dardanelles; aim to take Constantinople [150224]; Kitchener's memo on attrition [150225]; munition crisis [150305]; Treasury agreement on Labour relations [150315]; Kitchener and Lloyd George negotiating with Labour; Treasury meeting [150327]; the Bunsen committee on Middle East [150409]; creation of Munitions committee [150411]; Shell Scandal [150514]; Fisher resigns; fall of Asquith government [150515]; NEW GOVERNMENT OF COALITION: Bonar Law (Cons.) agrees to Coalition under Asquith. Lloyd George goes to Munitions; Churchill out of Admiralty [150519,20,25]; Munitions Act (1915) [150606]; Report on Munitions to Parliament [150629]; Kitchener announces reinforcements for both Gallipoli and Mesopotamia, new divisions for France [150705]; conferences of Calais and Chantilly [150706-7]; emphasis on new interdepartmental technologies [150713]; Imperial Conference of 1915 [150714]; *National Registration Act* [150715]; Board of Liquor Control [150722]; labour issues with coal miners [150730]; Balfour, at Admiralty, on defence against Zeppelins [150810]; Lloyd George's 'Big Gun program'; expansion 'beyond all plans' [150813-4]; Kitchener-Joffre meeting on Gen French; resulting agreement on Artois-Champagne; Churchill disagrees with strategy [150816,22-3]; Hankey's Dardanelles report, Hamilton doomed [150827]; Kitchener's position weakened by endorsement of Joffre's autumn offensive [150915]; talk of 'National Service' (incl. conscription) in Parliament; Asquith opposed [150918]; the consequences of Bulgaria's treaty with Triple Alliance; reinforcement of Salonica in Fall of 1915 [150924]; after the battle of Loos, Kitchener forced to have CIGS Gen Murray to report to cabinet [150926]; apportionating the sideshows at hand [151009]; Hamilton recalled, Monro replaces [151015,7]; Grey offers Cyprus to Greece in return for Greek-Serb Alliance; refused [151016]; Joffre's turnabout [151018]; the Derby Scheme [151023]; on the introduction of the Brodie steel 'Tommy helmet' [151027]; Joffre's influence on the British Cabinet to form a War Committee (not long in coming) [151029]; influence of Commodore Keyes on Cabinet to start again at Dardanelles [151101]; Asquith forms Dardanelles Committee (aka Cabinet War Committee) [151102]; End of Volunteer Service; Asquith's pledge to married men; Derby Scheme age schedules [151104-5]; Bonar Law's objection to continuation in Dardanelles [151108]; Kitchener's report on Dardanelles; visits King of Greece [151115-6]; Abandonment of Dardanelles and Alexandretta Scenario [151123]; FM French resigns [151206]; preparation to evacuate Gallipoli [151214]; End of Derby Scheme; Compulsory service brought in; unmarried men first [151217]; full evacuation of Gallipoli [151214,8,20,7]; Lloyd

George's blame in H of C [151221]; Robertson becomes CIGS [151223]; Robertson's influence on the sizing down of 'sideshowes' [151227] Haig in London to discuss Chantilly [151228];

1916– The Sykes-Picot agreement and its mismanagement from London [160104,0220]; *The Military Service Act* (1916); marks end of voluntary recruitment through Kitchener's armies or Pal Battalions; all recruits in Regular British Army for duration [160105,23,7]; final evacuation of Gallipoli; Newfoundland Regiment [160107-8]; Asquith with newspaper barons to explain issues of naval blockades [160125]; Parliament prolongs its own life by postponing elections *sine die* [160130]; Lord Curzon's ideas on maritime transport [160212]; London meeting with Colonel House for Wilson mediation; refused [160215]; doubts about summer plans in light of Verdun opening [160222]; creation of Egypt Mediterranean Expeditionary Force, most Gallipoli troops to France [160314-5]; Kitchener and Robertson involved in convincing Haig that relief must be provided for Verdun in form of diversionary attack [160328]; Asquith's authorization of the Somme offensive [160407]; the Five Million count [160417]; So far 423 ships (1,4mt) sunk; rate of replacement equal; blockade of Germany tightened [160419]; all single men enlisted; married men called in succession of classes of age, up to 41; Universal Conscription before Parliament [160426,0502]; Townshend's surrender at Kut with garrison of 13,000; staggering losses among POWs [160430]; Kitchener invited to Russia by Grand Duke Nicholas [160513]; the Cambon-Grey Agreement based on the Sykes-Picot agreement [160516]; the argument about horse fodder between War Committee and Army Council «Absolutely Astonishing» [160518]; Gen Maurice's information about the French reduction in the Somme plan [160519]; *The Military Service Act* (1916 - Session 2); married men called in; Conscription Law [160525]; Wilson's speech on mediation; rejected in both Great Britain and Germany [160527]; Kitchener Dead! [160605]; Joffre in London; his forced and half-baked position on Salonica; Lloyd George's skepticism on his plans for Somme [160609]; Sharif of Mecca King Husseyn opens hostilities against Ottomans with Arab attack on Red Sea port of Jeddah; 4000 Bedoins involved [160610]; Munition production; problem of faulty fuses [160619]; First day of the Somme casualties [160701,3]; Lloyd George becomes Secretary of War to replace Kitchener [160704]; Declaration of London (1909) repudiated on grounds of blockade shortcomings [160707]; Parliamentary Enquiries launched into Mesopotamia and Dardanelles operations [160707]; the Irish question in Parliament; John Redmond's deal [160724]; execution of Casement [160803]; facing attrition of August 1916 [160812]; half-million casualties in 60 days in Somme [160830]; clash between Secretary of War Lloyd George and CIGS Gen Robertson on a mission fo Robertson to go to Russia; he will not go; sees LG as intent on being 'top dog' in military strategy, which will not do [160926]; British Railway Executive Eric Geddes becomes Head of British-run railroads in France; requests railway troops from Canada for Somme logistics; nine construction battalions to come [160927]; LG's statement «...to a knock out!», dismissing Woodrow Wilson [160929]; on the refusal, by Douglas Haig, that larger bombardment aircraft be developed in air services; his advice retained by government determines a neat inferiority in this type compared to German Gothas [161003]; Balfour (Admiralty), advancing considerate nuances on the «... to a knock Out» speech by LG, does not sway cabinet [161004]; Asquith and war finances [161011]; LG's determination to confront the British High Command on their Somme strategy; asks for Memo from CIGS explaining prospects of Haig's strategy; this will end in the demise of Asquith! [161026]; Parliamentary debate opens leadership debate; Bonal Law loses support of many Conservatives; his key role in the Asquith coalition is threatened [161108]; Runciman's warning on looming danger of breakdown on shipping if current levels of

sinking by U-Boats continue [161110]; the Lansdowne letter [161116]; Conference of Chantilly and Paris; the Robertson trip to Russia cancelled [161117]; LG's recommendations for a three-man War Cabinet excluding PM Asquith [161202]; Asquith toppled by LG; Second Liberal Coalition [161206]; Hankey becomes secretary of War Cabinet; Saturday, Dec 9, first meeting of Lloyd George's War Cabinet with Bonar Law; Milner, Curzon, Handerson, Gen Robertson and Adm Jellicoe [161208] Salonica: Sarraïl takes Monastir; Greek tragedy [161209]; Bethmann Hollweg's Peace Offer: an attempt to divide Allies of the Entente [161212]; Gen Maude rebuilt the Mesopotamia Force and ready to go to Baghdad; now under British control [161213]; Lloyd George's first speech in parliament after becoming PM; crisis government: no longer a democracy as we knew it [161219]; Wilson's offer to mediate in Dec 1916: asks all parties to state their war aims; Colonel House involved [161220]; Gen Murray advances in the Sinai to defend Egypt [161224];

1917– PM Lloyd George preparing a conference in Rome where he wishes to influence Allied military strategy [170105]; little results from the offer of mediation; US Amb. to Berlin James W. Gerard makes a statement meant to convey American impartiality to the German government [170106]; PM back from Rome: not as expected [170109]; as governments respond to Wilson's request for their war aims, it becomes more evident that complete victory or defeat are the only possible outcome; no point of conciliation can be found [170110]; Nivelle in London to discuss 1917 operations; LG agrees with his plans; Haig has objections [170115]; Cowdray at the Air Board [170117]; Prince Faisal, assisted, gets Turks to abandon Medina [170118]; Delegates to St.Petersburg conference, Milner and Gen Henry Wilson [170119]; Wilson's famous speech to the Nations at War remembered for «Peace Without Victory»; exhorting halt in hostilities and diplomatic negotiations on equal footing [170122]; creation of women's services WAACs and QMAACs [170126]; Parliament Speaker's report on voting reforms and prolongation of parliament [170130]; Air Board Chair, Lord Cowdray, issued with a charter [170205]; Neville Chamberlain appointed Director of National Service [170206]; the idea of convoys has many fathers [170211]; Lord Cromer ready with his enquiries into Mesopotamia and Dardanelles campaign [170215]; Geddes looking for more Dominion volunteer railroad troops [170220]; report from Milner in St Petersburg conference [170302]; Haig uneasy with Nivelle's plans for the battle of Arras [170307]; Maude in Baghdad! [170311]; scorched earth in the German retreat to the Hindenburg Line [170314]; German naval attacks of Ramsgate, Margate, Goodwind Sands, damages to HMS *Paragon* and HMS *Llewellyn* [170317]; The Nivelle Affair in France, which topples government, brings discredit to the upcoming operation [170319]; Labour strikes in munitions factories; The Munitions of War Act (1915) and Regulation 42 make it unlawful for workers to strike; nevertheless, work conditions create unrest [170322]; the misery of the cold winter of 1916-1917 [170323]; actions in Hijaz and Gaza [170325-6]; Parliament prolongs itself; creation of Ministry of National Service [170327,8]; Second Battle of Gaza: set piece battle is a severe defeat for the British with heavy casualties (6,500); Murray' reputation damaged [170417]; Conference of Saint-Jean Maurienne; Italian refusal to negotiate with Austro-Hungary [170418]; Controversy in Salonica [170419]; the Balfour delegation to the United States [170422]; re-start of the Battle of Arras [170423]; Maude captures key Ottoman Samarra railway [170427]; «Bloody April» in aircraft losses and «Bloody April» in shipping losses; nadir of success [170425,8]; Lettow-Vorbeck pushed to SE Tanganyika [170429]; the convoy decision [170430]; Smuts' report supporting Haig [170502]; strategic conference in Paris: in consideration of the error of having supported Nivelle despite Haig's warnings, PM Lloyd George is now decidedly behind Haig for his future plans; the French are utterly demoralized by the recent humiliation [170504];

Falkenhayn in Constantinople [170507]; Greece joins the Entente [170612]; PM creates War Policy Committee excluding military leaders; opposed to Haig's plans for Flanders deep penetration; want action in Palestine and Italy [170619]; Conference on war strategy opposes military (Robertson, Haig, Jellicoe) to civilian War Policy Cabinet in head-on clash; Haig promises restraint in casualties; Robertson refuses to send guns to Italy; PM outraged he cannot stop [170620-1; Pétain and Foch as Westerners as well [170627]; Hamilton's Royal commission on Mesopotamia operation releases report; severe blame against leadership, British, Indian, civilian and military, and particularly, scandalous management of medical services in the operation [170703]; Following another bombing of London, Smuts appointed to review air assets management [170708]; resignation of Secretary for India, Austen Chamberlain [170713]; Cadorna's request to France and Great Britain for divisions and guns to finish off the Austrians-Hungarians in Italy; Robertson's refusal at Lloyd George's support [170715]; Geddes at Admiralty to implement convoy system [170716]; reports that Russia may not return to the war due to political unrest [170717]; Chancellor Michaelis' censure of moderates in Reichstag on 19 Jul 1917; Lloyd George's reply to the speech [170719,21]; Paris conference where Italians and French do not see eye-to-eye; Italians are determined to gain ground against Austria and do nothing else [170725]; the Ramsay MacDonald debate on War policy [170726]; Haig's Flanders' attack to begin; organization of armies [170730]; Start of the Third Battle of Ypres ('Passchendaele') in rain and mud [170731]; the great Socialist conference of Stockholm; a seed of things to come in Europe [170811]; China declares war to Germany and Austria-Hungary [170814]; Haig cagy about Flandres op [170821]; gold and British finances in the war [170822]; Smuts' report on Air forces; recommends amalgamation of RFC and RNAS, creation of a separate service, and a new Air Ministry [170824]; Haig's renewed demands for men; he wants 100,000! [170903]; the Flanders operations are now perceived by the public as being much more costly in lives than propaganda says; demonstrations blame government for lying to the People [170906]; three CinC in France and one notable CoS [170922]; Conference in Boulogne; Robertson agrees to French request for Haig to take up more front line; Haig not happy [170925]; Caporette: Italian retreat to Tagliamento and Piave rivers [171024,6]; The Balfour Declaration [171102]; Minister of Munitions Churchill behind the creation of Allied Maritime Transport Council (AMTC) to coordinate shipping among Allied nations; crucial step in prioritizing munitions transport; key step in creation of more Allied agencies for central coordination of assets [171104]; The Rapallo Conference, Italy; agreement for the creation of Supreme War Council in Versailles with high civilian government representatives; Lloyd George's influence in the Rapallo Convention [171105]; British victory at Gaza [171107]; War Cabinet allocating top priority for shipping to bringing American troops [171109]; Jaffa taken [171116]; Churchill discusses rearmament of Italy in Paris [171117]; death of Gen Maude [171118]; Lloyd George and the decision to implement the Supreme War Council against the advice of the War Office; his rationale [171119]; Churchill on the allocation of shipping for munitions and on the importance of Canadian production of munitions [171124]; PM not pleased with Adm Jellicoe [171125]; Lenin's «Decree of Peace»; his decision to seek armistice; the army is disbanded and chaos is spreading; the Russians are out of the war! [171126]; Election reform in *Representation of the People Law*; addresses soldier votes and women's enfranchisement [171208]; Allenby entering Jerusalem [171211]; PM astounded when new British tactics dictate that Passchendaele should be abandoned because of vulnerabilities [171214]; Newspaper Baron A.H. Northcliffe becomes Director of Propaganda in Enemy Countries [171216]; the Whitley Councils for improvement of industrial relations [171221]; PM dismisses Jellicoe on Christmas Eve [171224]; consideration of

consequence of Russian armistice (see **Supreme Council**) [171225]; Japanese navy to Vladivostok [171226]; reorganization of British divisions in France; from 12 to 9 battalions per division [171227]; Trenchard CAS at Air Ministry [171229]; PM involved in removing close senior staff officers near Haig; resentment at such unwarranted interference [171230];

1918– Wilson's «Fourteen Points» Speech: the death sentence of two empires [180108]; David Lloyd George and Douglas Haig in a very cheery party: the tobacco bet [180108]; the Rowlatt Act in India to counter German subversion [180114]; offer to US for shipping of raw troops, not formations, without equipment in a short surge of transport [180116]; workers' unions oppose 'dilution' of workplace expertise due to recruitment of skilled manpower; women fill leadership roles that need trade experience [180117]; Sir Auckland Campbell Geddes and the National Conference of Labour Unions [180119]; Dunsterforce: leaving Baghdad for the Caucasus [180127]; *The Representation of the People Act* enlarges enfranchisement to larger electorate, including women and soldiers [180206]; Beaverbrook becomes Minister of Information in British Cabinet [180210]; Smuts reports positively on Palestine Front; recommends pursuance to Constantinople in view of German negotiations in Brest Litovsk [180215]; Robertson fired; goes to Home Command; replaced by Henry Wilson [180219]; Pres. Wilson: from Fourteen Points to Four Principles; Chancellor von Hertling replies; attempts at dividing UK and US [180225]; Allenby on a roll, from Jaffa to Amman, then planning for Damascus [180226]; Central Powers' strong arm tactics in the Ukraine; unprecedented humiliations [180303-4]; Churchill's plan for Armament production for 1918-1919 [1803]; Haig's refusal to Rawlinson and Wilson [180306]; Hospital ship *Guilford Castle* attacked by U-55 [180310]; the battle for manpower for the Front; Government's incredulity toward Haig's arguments [180314]; Balfour's Allied Diplomatic Conference of London resolves that allies must ask Japan and US to act against Central Powers' invasion of Russia through the East: Siberia [180316]; See **Battles of Kaiserschlacht** covering final operational efforts of both sides, in France, for 1918, until the end of the war). Birth of the Royal Air Force (RAF) [180401]; Foch named in authority to conduct overall control of operations in France in the name of Supreme War Council; national Commanders-in-Chief, Pétain, Haig and Pershing, to conform to his overall plans [180403]; Churchill's Easter Egg; surge in Munitions to compensate for recent expenditures [180406]; The Irish Conscription Crisis: massive protests prevent British Government from imposing Conscription in Catholic Ireland [180418]; the Summit of Abbeville: Foch given additional responsibilities as overall commander of whole Western Front, including Italy; Versailles planning staff transferred to his HQ; Pershing agrees to transport of troops over materiel [180502]; decisions on Russia: protection of Allied materiel in Murmansk and Archangel; Japanese progress in Vladivostok and Siberia [180503]; the Maurice Affair: civilian-military confrontation before Parliament; challenging the PM in the Press on numbers of troops in France; polarization of the Liberal Party; cashiered [180507]; [180507]; success of air defence over London; RAF attacks of German bombers increase due to wide network of observer stations with searchlights and telephones [180518]; Sending of Gen Poole to Murmansk to protect allied stockpiles against Reds or Germans [180525]; Haig-Foch argument over Haig's control of British divisions in Strategic Reserve; Foch is adamant; he cannot have them! [180607]; after his «Fourteen Points» of 8 Jan 1918, his «Four Principles» of 11 Feb, his speech on «Four Ends» of 4 Jul rings a bell around the world; the timing is good; German diplomats understand that there is something there for them [180704]; very wrong predictions that the war will last into 1919 [180825]; incredulity of Cabinet before Haig's request for more troops [180910]; Foch reacts to Pres Wilson's indications that he would

like to be mediator for an armistice; in the military committee of the Supreme War Council he makes it clear that the military authorities of the allies will have to be involved in ensuring that the Central Powers, if they want an armistice, will have to relinquish the arms that make them capable of renewing war; this includes land, sea and air material of war [181008]; Foreign Affairs ministers at Versailles tell Wilson that he must consult before any initiative taken in regard to armistice; his views do not correspond to those of nations involved in the war since the start [181009]; recent sinking by U-Boats of merchant vessels jeopardize the Central Powers' negotiations for peace; German Navy told to stop sinking merchant vessels [181010]; Cabinet meeting dealing with Victory! [181013];

Ministries:

Foreign Office: Foreign Secretary Edward Grey. Facing German-Ottoman Alliance [140722]; Russian mobilisation [140725]; Edward Grey (see **Grey**). Pre-War diplomacy; naval treaty with France [140802]; Entente or Triple Entente. Fr. *Traité de Londres*. [140904]; the question of the «Black List» of shipping companies prevented from entering blockade; United States' outrage [160725]; British-Romanian negotiations to obtain that the Salonica army prevent the Bulgarians from being a threat to Romanians; the France-first reply from War Office [160802]; Grey's reaction to Special Commissions on Dardanelles and Mesopotamia, undermining work of government in time of war [160804]; a Protectorate for Qatar; making sure that the Berlin-Baghdad does not reach the Persian Gulf [161103]; German Amb. to Washington hands in letter announcing resumption of Unrestricted Submarine Warfare on February 1st, 1917. [170131]; Wilson speech in Congress [170402]; China declares war to Germany and Austria-Hungary [170814]; Balfour on the need for British to keep in good terms with Russian leadership even after armistice with Central Powers [171210]; Smuts sent to Geneva to meet Count von Mendorff-Pouilly-Dietrichstein to discuss Austrian overtures for peace; the result is a confirmation that AH is bound to Germany to the end [171219]; German response to recent speeches by PM and Pres. Wilson; self-confidence is high in Central Powers due to prospects being opened in Brest Litovsk negotiations with Russian resources in the balance [180124]; Trotsky compelled to sign the Treaty of Brest Litovsk; enormous spoils to the winners [180303];

Important Foreign Affairs Events:

Treaty of London. Entente or Triple Entente. Fr. *Traité de Londres*. Great Britain, France and Russia. *Déclaration contre la paix séparée*; texte; description [140904]; Japanese association with [141208]; Japanese association with [141208];

Sykes-Picot Agreement on post-War Middle-East [1604,0202]; how the agreement signed by members of respective Foreign Office were made without consultations with their diplomats and politicians in Middle East, after Arabs had changed their views due to the failures of the Dardanelles and Alexandretta campaigns, and influences from high officials in London. International recognition of the agreement proved an error that changed the course of the following century. [160204,0202]; Followed by formal international Cambon-Grey Agreement [160516]

Admiralty: Churchill finds oil [140717]; Sends message to 'commence hostilities' [140804]; See **Great Britain/Royal Navy**. Balfour (first coalition), then Carson (Lloyd George coalition); the convoy decision: Lloyd George's influence in getting the Admiralty to adopt the convoy system to escort merchant shipping against USW; success was evident [170430]; replacement of Carson by Sir Eric

Geddes [170716];

War Office: Lord Kitchener recalled from Egypt to become War Secretary. Wore his uniform as Field Marshal and liked to keep aloof of WO staffs, incl. CIGS.

Ministry of Shipping. Created by the Lloyd George Coalition in Jan 1917 replaces the Shipping Controller at the Admiralty. Joseph Mackay, experienced shipping manager, takes over planning of all non-Navy shipping [170112]; the convoy system (see **Admiralty**)

Armed Services:

Air Services. For 22,000 Canadians in British Air services, see **Royal Naval Air Service (RNAS), Royal Flying Corps (RFC), and Royal Air Force (RAF)**. See **Aircraft Development**. Birth of British military aviation [140701]; recruitment; Kitchener's Armies [140930]; first aerial torpedoing of ship in Dardanelles [150812]; the 'Fokker Scourge' [150903]; creation of the Air Committee by Derby to coordinate allocation of resources and operational responsibilities between RFC and RNAS [160208]; allocation of responsibility for anti-Zeppelin defence from RNAS to RFC [160218]; RNAS involved in bombardment of Belgium ports and aerodromes [160320]; RFC provides air supply into besieged Kut [160415]; PM Lloyd George puts Cowdray at Air Board to replace Curzon, going to War Cabinet; mandates to bring peace between RFC and RNAS [170117,0205]; the *Habersdadt*, with two machine-guns firing through the propeller represent a threat to RFC engaged in Vimy observation; the use of F.E.2b and F.E. 2d 'pushers' to counter [170218]; the ascendancy of German aviation in «Bloody April» of 1917 where observation aircraft for the Nivelles offensive met superior German Albatros D.III fighters with better trained pilots [170425] Smuts' report on Air forces; recommends amalgamation of RFC and RNAS, creation of a separate service, and a new Air Ministry [170824]; Gen Hugh Trenchard becomes Chief of air Staff at the Air Ministry [171229]; Plans to use airships and aircraft to patrol for submarines; will prove very effective, including flying boats sinking seven U-Boats and convoys being escorted by airborne observers [180115]; Lord Rothermere and Gen Trenchard at Air Ministry prepare for unification of RFC and RNAS into RAF [180118]; **Birth of the Royal Air Force (RAF)**; RFC and RNAS become RAF; 9,000 women transfer from the **Women's Royal Naval Service (WRNS)** and **Women's Air Auxiliary Corps (WAAC)** to join the **Women's Royal Air Force (WRAF)** [180401]; Richthofen killed [180421]; the use of RAF to create deception plans for the battle of Amiens [180807];

British Army: On the composition and sources of the British Army that fought in the First World War [141201];

British Expeditionary Force (BEF).

1914- (See **Battles of/Frontiers**) Planning [140711]; Small professional army; preparation and deployment; position in Maubeuge; as a sixth French army; 'Contemptible' [140806]; Embarking [140808]; at Mons; called 'Contemptible Little Army' [140823, 9]; Condé-Mons Canal [140823]; From Mons to Le Cateau; avoiding the enemy [140829]; Villers-Cotterêts; Fr. *combats de repli* [140901]; (See **Battles of/Marne**) (5-11 Sep 1914); description [140905]; *septième division* [141002]; (See **Battles of/Flanders, Race to the Sea**) French-Foch meeting; concentration in Flandres; Churchill out of Antwerp [141010]; Munitions problem [141012]; tasked with Ypres [141013]; first battle of Ypres (15 Oct-15 Nov); orders for disposition; battle of the Yser; not moving [141015,8]; Ypres, Belgian army; Foch and new German Reserve army corps [141025]; statistics on losses so far; end of original Contemptibles [141107]; End at Ypres Salient; exhaustion; Haig [141112]; end of Race to the Sea [141119]; a second army to the BEF [141231];

1915- (See **Battles of/Artois and Champagne**) Munitions [150305,24]; loss of Hill 60, Ypres [150505] Gallipoli casualties

- [150704]; new Territorial and Kitchener divisions, 2 Cdn Div [150705-6]; networks of tension in high command [150727]; (See **Battles of Dardanelles, /Gallipoli**) landing at Sluvs Bay; Stopford's mistake [150806-7]; Chantilly conference of 14 Sep; BEF in Joffre's Artois offensive of 25 Sep 1915 [150914]; Prep for Loos [150923]; Battle of Loos [150925]; Loos and Joffre's campaign a failure [150923]; French ordered to select divisions for East (Salonica or Dardanelles) [151011]; Hamilton recalled from Dardanelles [151015]; Joffre's Chantilly conference; munitions as the key 1916 issue [151205]; Resignation of FM John French [151206]; BEF has 35 divisions (1m men) to France's 95 [151206]; Haig becomes CinC [1512];
- 1916**— Haig-Joffre meeting on 1916 strategy [160113]; end of Volunteer service [160123]; (See **Battles of Somme, /Verdun**) Haig orders 100 Mark I tanks [160217]; arrival of first Kitchener's armies; sent to Rawlinson's Fourth Army for Somme; training [160303]; Tommy helmets for Canadians [160412]; General Kiggell training divisions for offensive action [160512]; German hit at Vimy [160521]; Joffre and Haig agree on 1st July [160527]; Conference of Amiens [160530]; Rawlinson's plan for Fourth army for the Somme [160614]; Munition production; problem of faulty fuses [160619]; First day of the Somme [160701]; BEF CoS Charteris' optimistic evaluation of Somme so far [160718]; half-million casualties in 60 days in Somme [160830]; the last fighting in the Somme; Gough's drastic measures in the Third Battle of the Ancre, rotating divisions into fire [161113,8];
- 1917**— Currie heads a visit to Verdun [170102]; Haig writes to DMO asking to keep politicians out of military plans [170207]; (See **Battles of Arras, /Chemin des Dames**) dealing with barbed wire: the No 106 Shell Fuse [170222]; Conference of Calais, 26-7 Feb 1917 [170313]; the Great Hindenburg retreat: German armies on the Arras-Somme Front suddenly withdraw to the Siegfried (aka Hindenburg) Line [1702]; the Haig-Nivelle feud on status of British group of armies involved in Battle of Arras [170313]; Nivelle has to face criticism for his stance, continuing after the retreat of the Germans of up to 20 miles on a 100-mile Front; his French army group commanders and Haig want the op cancelled; French Assembly gets involved in forcing Nivelle to change his plan; his offer of resignation on 18 March [170318]; the new circumstances of the three German armies behind the Hindenburg Line [170320]; the British advance of three armies (eight corps) in front of Arras is successful on the first day, including at Vimy [170409]; «Bloody April» in aviation losses [170425]; End of Nivelle offensive; loss of quarter million men in all [170509]; creation of Tank Corps [170727]; Haig's Flanders' attack to begin; organization of four armies: Gough's Fifth moved beside Plumer's Second; French and Fourth Army to the North; Rawlinson to be involved in amphibious operation in Belgium; artillery engaged in massive preliminary mud-churning [170730]; Start of the Third Battle of Ypres ('Passchendaele') in rain and mud [170731]; amphibious portion cancelled; the mud as a determinant of success [1708]; Charteris and propaganda [170813]; succession of operations in Flanders (Pilckem (Fifth Army), Langemark (Fifth Army), and Passchendaele-Wytshaete (Second Army) since 31Jul have reaped 68,000 casualties in three weeks; War Office and Cabinet are not informed of the lack of success [170821]; Plumer makes the mistake of letting nice days be dedicated to preparations; he launches in the rain in Flanders [170912]; the battle of Menin Road: Plumer's one-day success [170920]; the rain is boss [170929]; Haig's demand for two Canadian divisions [171002]; Haig orders another go to Plumer on 4 October; rain is on the side of defenders [171004-5]; Haig wants more attacks on 9 and 12 Oct so that front line are not in water during winter [171007]; the battle of Poelcapelle, the 'saddest day of the war' [171009]; Lloyd George's undermining of Haig [171011]; The Battle of Cambrai; a first massive use of tanks (476); an incomplete victory [171120]; Haig on the limitations of tanks in battle and curtailing growth of Tank Corps [171204];
- reorganization of British divisions in France; from 12 to 9 battalions per division; 145 battalions disappear through reassignment of personnel [171227,180110];
- 1918**— Note 12 of SWC recommends centralization of reserves to the C-in-Cs of the French theatre; Haig and Pétain do not respond well [180122]; Dullens Conference: Haig disturbed by Government undermining; making severe mistakes in assessing German intentions for the spring [180216]; effects of the reorganization of divisions in the defence plans; Fifth army affected with consequences [1802]; Growth in Specialised Arms: how combat troops now get assisted on the offensive [180301]; preemptive strikes against massing German divisions [180315]; (See **Battles of Kaiserschlacht**) covering final operational efforts of both sides, in France, for 1918, until the end of the war). Op MICHAEL (21 Mar-5 Apr 1918). Friction between Currie, Horne and Haig when Currie insists that his divisions that were dispatched in haste during Op GEORGETTE are to come back to him immediately [180415]; Lgen Maxse's training methods in 1918 [180510]; On 20 May 1918, Foch senses that the Germans are overextended and vulnerable; he orders advances in all armies of the Allied Front in France, with priorities around Amiens and Béthune [180520]; realignment of Fourth and Fifth British armies, with Birdwood taking new Fifth and Rawlinson taking new Fourth [180523]; The French armies have now pushed the German armies in Champagne to the line where they started the advance in Champagne; Pétain has now won the Second Battle of the Marne; not less important than the first one; from now on, the Germans will withdraw constantly until the end of the war April 4 marks the beginning of the Last Hundred Days [180802];
For operations between 4 Aug and 11 Nov 1918, see **Battles of Last Hundred Days**
- Mesopotamia Expeditionary Force (MEF).** (See **Battles of Mesopotamia**) Sending of 6 Div to Mesopotamia; creation of Mesopotamia Expeditionary Force (MEF) under Gen Nixon [150212]; battle of Qurna [150412-3]; Townshend captures Amara; Nixon pushes further up Euphrates R. and Tigris R [150603]; Siege of Kut with 6 Indian Army surrounded; relief by 13 Div
- British field armies:**
- First Army:** Crossed the Channel as BEF in first days of the war; fought to end of year as single British army until formation of Second army. Known as the 'Little Contemptible army', annihilated by Christmas 1914. Rebuilt with Territorial army and volunteers See BEF.
- Second Army:** *Une ville en mouvement*; creation of; components [141226, 31]; Gen Plumer; Canadians in St. Julien [150416]; Canadian Corps [150923]; Start of the Third Battle of Ypres ('Passchendaele') in rain and mud [170731];
- Third Army:** Gen Allenby in the battle of Arras, April 1917; under Gen Byng after Jun 1917.
- Fourth Army:** created under Gen Rawlinson, before the Somme Offensive, largely with volunteers and Kitchener's armies; involved in the Somme offensive.
- Fifth Army:** created under Gen Gough, first as a Reserve Army for the Fourth army in the Somme; became Fifth Army; sent to Flanders for Third Ypres (Passchendaele)
- British Army Corps**
- I British Corps.** Haig [140829];
- II British Corps.** See Smith-Dorrien; From Mons to Le Cateau [140829]; arrival of 6 Div, last of three Corps divs [140916];
- IX Corps:** Gallipoli; Sluvs Bay landing [150806-7];
- British Divisions:**
- 6 Div:** Completes II British Corps. Arrives at Fismes with 16th, 17th and 18th Brigades, and 2nd 24th and 38th artillery brigades. [140916]; sent to Mesopotamia (Gen Townshend) to join Indian Army brigades [150212];

- 7 Div:** Involved in Belgium with Royal Marines [141008];
13 Div (Western): Evacuated at Gallipoli [160107]; sent to Mesopotamia to relieve Kut [160402];
16 Div (Irish): gassed in Hulluch [160427];
29 Div: See **Newfoundland**. Evacuated from Gallipoli
52 Div: Evacuated at Gallipoli [160107];

Specialist Corps:

Machine-Gun Corps. Creation of British Machine-Gun Corps [151021]; creation of Heavy Section of Machine Gun Corps to take over training of tank crews in France; preparations for Flers-Courcelette [160904]; 1 Bde Motor Machine Gun sent to help Fifth Br Army retreat near Amiens [180328];

Tank Corps. Creation of the Corps in July 1917, after one year of confidential existence as Heavy Branch of the Machine Gun Corps; tank battalions being created; 15 at end of 1917, 26 at war-end [170727]; Haig on the limitations of tanks in battle and curtaining growth of Tank Corps; limitation to 28 battalions of 60 tanks (1,620) and establishment of 22,500 men; his insistence on increasing infantry rather than machines [171204];

Territorial Army. [141201]; Will not transfer to France before arrival of Canadian Division [150208];

Women's Army Auxiliary Corps (WAAC). will become **Queen Mary's Army Auxiliary Corps (QMAAC)**

Royal Navy (RN).

1914– *Mobilisation russe* [140725]; War Disposition [140731]; Ordered to War Station [140804]; Loss of *Aboukir*, *Hogue* and *Cressy* [140922]; (See **Battles of/Coronel, Falklands**) Cradock ordered to chase German East Asia Squadron from Falklands to W. of South America [141006]; Royal Marines in Belgium [141008]; protection of Scapa Flow [141008]; Churchill and shore bombardment in Belgium [141016]; submarines threaten Scapa [141017]; *Breslau* and *Goeben* cross Bosphorus into Black Sea, threatening Sebastopol and Odessa [141027]; Bombardment of Dardanelles forts [141103];

1915– Dogger Bank [150123]; Royal Navy Marines land in Gallipoli with limited success; naval bombardment proves ineffective [150227]; entrance of RN raid blocked in Dardanelles [150319]; Robeck's decision for the Dardanelles fleet to renounce the attempt to cross the Dardanelles; Churchill isolated [150323]; Churchill out of Admiralty with Asquith coalition; [150520];

1916– Under the influence of Tirpitz, «Intensified submarine warfare» against armed merchant shipping is resumed; prelude to full USW [160229]; severe division of views in German High Command on USW; Kaiser decides that Chancellor has three months to sort out diplomatic solution; Tirpitz resigns on postponement [160306]; Battle of Jutland; Grand Fleet and Cruiser Fleet intercept German High Seas Fleet as it attempts to exit the North Sea [160531]; merchant ships fitted with guns 4-inch plus, for their own protection; this hastens German USW [161031]; Runciman's warning and the question of convoys [161110]; Jellicoe recalled to Admiralty as First Sea Lord; to work on arming merchant vessels.

1917– Creation of Ministry of Shipping; takes away Admiralty's control [170112]; «Bloody April» in ship sunk; desperate submarine hunting sinks half-million ton per month [170428]; the convoy decision [170430]; convoy system on trial; Gibraltar to Downs; Convoy Section of Admiralty; abrupt decrease in sinking in next months [170522]; the work of Leo C. Money in computation of risk in the convoy system [170530]; PM not pleased with Adm Jellicoe [171125]; PM dismisses Jellicoe on Christmas Eve [171224];

1918– Raids at Zobrugge and Ostende; daring op led by Vadm Keyes succeeds in damaging port facilities at Zeebrugge in superb naval special operation [180422];

Ships:

- Aboukir.* Lost, rescue [140922];
Cressy. Lost [140922];
Exmouth [150729];
Glory. In escort for Canadian convoy first contingent. [141003];

Gloucesteer, HMS: In Malta, Mediterranean; chase of *Goeben* and *Breslau* [140810];

Goliath. Sunk in Dardanelles [150512]

Good Hope Adm Cradock's flag ship in Falklands, defeat in Coronel; loss of Canadian midshipmen [141101];

Hogue. Lost [140922];

Indefatigable, HMS: In Malta, Mediterranean; chase of *Goeben* and *Breslau* [140810];

Indomitable, HMS: In Malta, Mediterranean; chase of *Goeben* and *Breslau* [140810]; Dogger Bank [150123];

Inflexible. Falklands [141207]; damaged in Dardanelles raid [150319];

Invincible. Falklands [141207];

Irrisistible. Sunk in Dardanelles raid [150319];

Lancaster. Flag ship Adm Hornsby Atlantic Squadron in convoy [141003];

Lion. Dogger bank [150123];

Majestic. In convoy of first Canadian contingent [141003]; hit in Dardanelles [150530]

New Zealand Dogger Bank [150123];

Ocean. Sunk in Dardanelles raid [150319];

Princess Royal. In convoy protection for first Canadian contingent [141003]; Dogger Bank [150123];

Queen Elizabeth. Battleship (1913); sent to Dardanelles [150120]; recalled [150513];

Queen mary. Dogger Bank [150123];

Suffren. Damaged in Dardanelles raid [150319];

Tiger. Dogger Bank [150123];

Triumph. Sunk in Dardanelles [150530]

Submarine service:

B-11. Enters Dardanelles (Holbrook) [141213]; E11 (Nasmith) op in Marmara Sea [150607];

C-29. Decoy submarine [150829];

The Merchant Navy. armed merchant ships, trained to resist submarine attacks, involved in notorious fights, become armed arm of the war at sea [161229]; the convoy system [170430]; the case of Q-Ship *Dunraven*, resisting U-Boat UC-71 [170808];

Social Aspects: Postcards in France [150627]; Board of Liquor Control; YMCA, temperance movements [150722]; Labour [150730]; married men and Volunteer service [151104-5]; unmarried men first to be compulsorily enlisted [151217]; The Military Service Act (1916); all classes of unmarried men called first [160105]; naval blockades and food deprivation of civilian populations [160125]; conscientious objectors [160128]; compulsory service of married men [160426]; Irish Easter risings followed by gassing of Irish Division in British Army in Flanders create tensions that will prevent any conscription in Ireland [160427]; the symbol of Albert's Madonna [160907]; The Beaverbrook-Rothermere War Artist program [161228]; very successful publication of the Beaverbrook series of books *Canada in Khaki*, sold in UK even more than in Canada [1612]; Labour strikes in munitions factories; The Munitions of War Act (1915) and Regulation 42 make it unlawful for workers to strike; nevertheless, work conditions create unrest [170322]; Oswald Chambers and the YMCA services [171115]; Election reform in Representation of the People Law; addresses soldier votes and women's enfranchisement [171208]; The *Representation of the People Act* enlarges enfranchisement to larger electorate, including women and soldiers [180206]; the use of foreign labor, including large numbers of men from China, India and Africa, in Labor battalions; Canadian cross-continental transport of Chinese Labor Corps workers [180625-6]; The Spanish Flu: starts in the summer of 1918 with a first wave of severe symptoms that necessitate hospitalization; the second wave of 1919 will kill some fifty million people across the world [180801];

(End of GREAT BRITAIN)

Grey, Edward: Foreign secretary of Great Britain; The George-Henry Talks

[140726]; Austro-Hungarian declaration of war, statement [140729]; foreign contacts [140731]; Portrait; Pre-War negotiations [140802]; See **Great Britain/Ministries/Foreign Office**.
Guillaumat, Général Adolphe. Remplace Sarraill à Salonica [171223];

H

Haber, Dr. Fritz. Experiences with tear gas in Poland; mixed results [150131];

Habsburg, Archiduc Franz Ferdinand. Assassination [140626]; ;

Habsburg, Emperor Karl the First of Austria-Hungary, King Karl of Austria. Succeeds Franz Joseph. Well aware of the need for Austria-Hungary to finish the war as soon as possible to preserve the crumbling empire. [161122]; FM Czernin's statement reaffirming Austro-Hungarian allegiance to Germany; end of secret overtures to Allies; consequences on Habsburg dynasty [170221];

Habsburg, Franz Joseph, Emperor Austria-Hungary and King of Austria [140630]; Writes to Kaiser [140706]; Fr. [140708]; Ultimatum to Serbia [140719]; George-Henry negotiations [140726]; Declaration of War [140729]; Brinkmanship [140730]; death; replaced by Karl I (aka Charles I) [161121];

Haig, Gen Douglas. Was involved in all British battles on the French front in the war as Division, Corps; army commander and Commander-in-Chief of British Expeditionary Force (BEF).

1914– Commander I British Corps. From Mons to Le Cateau [140829]; end of Ypres [141112];

1915– First British Army; Canadians arrive [150303]; resignation of FM John French [151206]; becomes CinC [151219]; in London to discuss Chantilly; next day in Paris to speak of artillery [151228-9];

1916– Kitchener and Robertson involved in convincing Haig that relief must be provided for Verdun in form of diversionary attack [160328]; *préparations d'infrastructures pour 400,000 hommes et 100,000 chevaux pour l'opération de la Somme*. [160331]; Rawlinson's different style of biting [160413]; decrease of French participation in the Somme plan [160519]; Support of Joffre's Somme plans in London [160609]; Rawlinson's plan for Fourth Army for the Somme; obvious influence of Haig in cavalry tasks [160614]; Joffre-Haig conversations; British must close the gap as French troops are well forward; comparison in tactics [16073]; Haig's habit of ambivalence [160825]; Haig's horse shit in Flers Courcellette [160917]; Becomes Field Marshal [170101]; PM back from conference in Rome: has not succeeded in bending the will of the Allied governments, all influenced by the military leadership determined to continue in priority in France; he has no choice but to back Haig and Nivelle [170109]; Nivelle in London to discuss 1917 operations; LG agrees with his plans; Haig has objections; LG wants him to be under command of Nivelle [170115]; on Douglas's double intent, participating in the Nivelle offensive, but also looking after the north in Flanders, where the British are vulnerable; his use of railroads and supplies in double directions [170128]; FM Haig at Vimy [170214]; his undying ambitions for Flanders front [170526]; Allenby being sent to Egypt; PM asks him for 'Jerusalem at Christmas' [170601]; Trenchard's advice that Belgium coast should be retaken after heavy London bombing by Gothas of Jun 1917 [170613]; Haig's plans for an all out offensive in Flanders; LG's objections; Foch's 'duck march' remark [170617]; PM creates War Policy Committee excluding military leaders; opposed to Haig's plans for deep penetration in Flanders; want action in Palestine and Italy [170619]; Conference on war strategy opposes military (Robertson, Haig, Jellicoe) to civilian War Policy Cabinet in head-on clash; Haig promises restraint in casualties; Robertson refuses to send guns to Italy; PM outraged he cannot stop [170620-1]; Haig misinforms Cabinet and War Office on lack of success in first three weeks of Third Battle of Ypres; 68,000 casualties are unbearable to civilian leadership [170821]; again, thoughts of cavalades in Flanders, end-September 1917! [170929]; request for two Canadian divisions in Flanders; Currie refuses: all Canadian divisions or none! [171002]; Haig wants more attacks on 9 and 12 Oct [171007]; Lloyd George's undermining of Haig [171011]; PM involved in removing close senior

staff officers near Haig; resentment at such unwarranted interference [171230];

1918– A very cheery party: the tobacco bet [180108]; Dullens Conference: Haig disturbed by Government undermining his plans; making severe mistakes in assessing German intentions [180216]; Robertson fired; goes to Home Command [180219]; Haig's refusal to Rawlinson and Wilson [180306]; (For operations 1918, see **Battle of Kaiserschlacht** for operational movements); Foch named central 'coordinator' between French and British C-in-Cs by Milner and Clemenceau at Doullens [180326]; Op MICHAEL (21 Mar-5 Apr 1918) Foch named in authority to conduct overall control of operations in France in the name of Supreme War Council; national Commanders-in-Chief Pétain, Haig and Pershing, to follow his plans [180403]; facing Op GEORGETTE in armentières-Canal du Nord, Haig issues his message «our backs to the wall» to the troops to not withdraw [180410]; Friction between Currie, Horne and Haig when Currie insists that his divisions that were dispatched in haste during Op GEORGETTE are to come back to him immediately [180415]; the Summit of Abbeville: Foch given additional responsibilities as overall commander of whole Western Front, including Italy; Versailles planning staff transferred to his HQ; Pershing agrees to transport of troops over materiel [180502]; Haig-Foch argument over Haig's control of British divisions in Strategic Reserve; Foch is adamant; he cannot have them! [180607]; Haig gets a written mandate that he can resort to his government for his objections to Foch's decisions [180622]; Haig's very cold reception of Canadian Minister of Militia Newburn in his visit of GHQ [180717]; See **Battles of Last Hundred Days**. Incredulity of Cabinet before Haig's request for more troops [180910];

Hamburg, Germany. Kiev Kanal

Hamilton, Lord George. British High Official. Head of Royal commission on Mesopotamia operations, which releases report on July 3rd, 1917; severe blame against leadership, British, Indian, civilian and military, and particularly, scandalous management of medical services in the operation [170703];

Hamilton, Gen Ian. British. Cmdr of Gallipoli land force [150313]; Kitchener's offer to send better CoS (Braitwaite or Kiggell) [151002]; asked by Kitchener for opinion on withdrawal [151011]; recalled [151015];

Hamilton Gault, Andrew. Founder of PPCLI. [141116];

Hankey, Maurice: Colonel of the Royal Navy Marine Corps; War Book [140715]; [141125]; The Boxing Day Memo [141229]; Cassandra on Gallipoli [150316]; 'The Big Paper' on British-French communications [150626]; trip to Dardanelles [150719,29]; the Dardanelles report [150827]; musing on the vocation of Imperial troops: empire or continent? [151124]; acting as the attorney to the British Government before the Parliamentary Commissions [160722]; musing on Somme losses [160815]; Asquith toppled by LG; Second Liberal Coalition [161206]; H. becomes Secretary of new War Cabinet; asked to prepare briefing on all aspects of the war to be used as startpoint of deliberations; to be ready for first meeting in two days! [161208]; A new type of secretary: looking after «Machinery» and «Ideas»; brains at work in the War Committee [161211]; the idea of convoys has many fathers [170211];

Havre, Le. France. Arrival of BEF [140816];

Hentsch, Lcol Richard. His role in the Battle of the Marne [140909];

Hertling, Georg von. German statesman. Named Chancellor of Germany after Michaelis; represents a compromise between Parliament and High Command amid conservative-liberal confrontational relationship [171101]; *Friedensturm*: in the middle of Op BLÜCHER, Ludendorff asks Chancellor von Hertling to initiate a false offer of peace to give time to recover and alter political context to the favor of the Central Powers [180603];

High Explosive. Munitions type. Desired [141012];

High Seas Fleet. [140629, 30]

Hindenburg, Marshal Paul von Beneckendorff und. For Eastern Front (See **Germany/Government, /Army**) Replaces Prittwitz as Commander Eighth German Army on Eastern Front [140824]; Tannenber [140830]; appointment of Falkenhayn as CGS [140914];

calling for help in the East [141106]; named C-in-C Eastern Front [141113]; views on grand strategy [141115]; Conference in Spa; removed as CIGGS; Hindenburg and Ludendorff recalled from the East and installed as CIGGS and GMG, in reality, head of military regime [160829]; decisions on organization and tactics 'in depth' on Western Front; differ from Falkenhayn's principles of a stiff forward defence [160905]; Chancellor Bethmann Hollweg's memorandum on Germany's war aims; has to deal with H. who does not agree with much of the view expressed, and cannot reveal his aims in public [161114]; the fateful conference of Pless; decision on USW for 1st Feb 1917 [170108]; Hindenburg's political propaganda against foreign influence and socialist ideas [170804]; (See **Battles of/Kaiserschlacht, Last Hundred Days**)

Hindenburg Line. *Siegfried Stellung.* Description of the new circumstances of the three German armies behind the Hindenburg Line after the retreat [170320]; the system of lines [180901];

Hintze, Paul von. Foreign Minister of Germany in Sep 1918; informed on 30 Sep that the High Command now considers the war lost, that he is to initiate diplomatic overture to protect the German army and keep conquered lands [180930];

Hipper, Adm Franz Von. Dogger Bank engagement [150123];

Hoffmann, Col. Max. German Staff on Eastern Front [140817]; Brilliant counter-operation to Brusilov's improvised attacks of July 1917 [170701];

Hohenberg, Sophie Chotek, Duchess of, 140628

Hohenzollern, Kaiser Wilhelm II. The Blank Check [140706]; the George-Henry negotiations [140726]; Austro-Hungarian declaration of war, statement [140729]; Brinkmanship [140730]; his failure in the Marne [140907]; Conference in Spa, 29 Aug 1916; Falkenhayn removed as CIGGS; Hindenburg and Ludendorff recalled from the East and installed as CIGGS and GMG, in reality, head of military regime [160829]; Bethmann Hollweg's Peace Offer of Dec 1916: an attempt to divide Allies of the Entente [161212]; the fateful conference of Pless; decision on USW for 1st Feb 1917; Kaiser has no control, cannot support Chancellor's diplomatic approach; Admirals and Generals in agreement, direct State policy [170108]; his grandiose personal war aims in May 1917 [170513]; his son asks to consider limited manpower before arrival of Americans [1708]; See **Battles of/Kaiserschlacht** for operational movements of summer of 1918—Start of Op MICHAEL (21 Mar-5 Apr 1918) against Byng's Third Army and Gough's Fifth Army; 'A Storm of Troopers' [180321]; delusions and hubris [180614]; the last conference of the Great Crown Council at Wilhelm's «Neubois», in Spa; basking in unbounded optimism [180703]; on 23 July 1918, Wilhelm acknowledges the news from Hindenburg that his Kaiserschlacht has failed; this ends the exact year in which Hindenburg and Ludendorff have taken power, a year in which Wilhelm, marginalized, sank in complete delusion and hubris; the Thespian demigod will have difficulty coming back to earth [180723]; Wm

Hohenzollern, Crown Prince Wilhelm. Army Commander in Verdun. In Aug 1917, advocates negotiations for peace against father, and High Command's views. Foresees that manpower available cannot possibly face new threat from American armies. [170827];

Holland. British project of invasion [150328];

Holtzendorff, Adm Von. German. Tirpitzian views on the importance of maintaining Belgium in German hands because of the triad of ports Ostend-Zeebrugge-Antwerp [151125];

Hoover, Herbert C. American Chairman of Commission of Relief in Belgium; works at bringing food relief to starved Belgium. Works with French Comité national de Secours et d'Alimentation [150302];

Hornby, Adm. Commander North Atlantic Squadron; escort to first Canadian contingent [141003];

Horne, Gen Sir Henry. Commander of First British Army, former commander of XV Corps, outstanding artilleryman; on the artillery support to be provided for the Vimy operation by Canadian Corps [170226]; Currie's first command of the Canadian corps for battle: Lens; changing Army plans for a better one [170707]; Haig agrees with Currie's plan for Lens; Battle of Hill 70 [170723]; first day of the battle for Hill 70: 1 Div and 2 Div attack [170813]; Friction between Currie, Horne and Haig when Currie insists that his divisions that were

dispatched in haste during Op GEORGETTE are to come back to him immediately [180415]; Warning to Currie for Canal du Nord [180922];

Hotzendorf, Baron Conrad von. Chief of the Austro-Hungarian General Staff [140630] [140727]; In Serbia [140824]; defeat in Galicia [140918]; launching of further ops in Carpathians [150222];

House, Colonel Edward M. Fr. Agent américain [140709]; Pres Wilson's envoy House does not succeed in changing Allied and German stance on blockades; [150301];

Hoyos, Count Alexander Graf von. Austro-Hungarian Foreign Ministry [140701];

Hugues, Sam. Canada. Minister of Militia. PPCLI [140801]; Valcartier [140908]; Embarkation of first contingent [140923]; Motor Machine-Guns and Kitchener [141228]; faulty supplies 'sham shoes' [150127]; at Saint-Nazaire [150216]; choice of division commander; Currie-Turner-Hugues controversy [150624]; the London organizational mess [151106]; the Ross rifle scandal ends with the final distribution of British Lee Enfield rifles to all Canadians in June 1916 [160621]; waning popularity with MPs and troops [160705]; Canadian Royal Commission on Shell Committee [160720]; Byng-Hugues relations on non-appointment of son Garnet Hugues to division command [160818]; Borden recalls Sam Hugues home from England on account of his creation of a «Canadian Militia Subcouncil» without Cabinet authorization [161007]; creation of Ministry of Overseas Forces; PM Borden assigns to the current Canadian High Commissioner to Great Britain, Perley, the status of Minister of Overseas Military Forces of Canada (OMFC); Sir Sam does not approve [161030]; Borden gives an ultimatum to Hugues that he is to conform to Cabinet exigencies [161106]; Sam Hugues resigns; under criticism, Borden publishes the damning correspondence between PM and minister; public opinion favors Borden [161111];

Hungary. Defence of Carpathians [141129];

Hunter-Weston. Gen Sir Aylmer. ANZAC Commander; battle of Krithia [150604];

Hussein, Sharif H. bin Ali. (aka Husayn Huseyn) Sharif and Emir of Mecca. Arab leader challenges Sultan's *Jihad* [141114]; son Faisal informs King H. on the *Damascus Protocol*, prepared by Arab rebellious groups, enjoining him to separate from the Grand Caliph of Constantinople [150601]; letter to HC McMahon initiating Husayn-McMahon correspondence on Arab-British alliance [150718]; as Emir of Mecca, opens hostilities against Ottomans with Arab attack on Red Sea port of Jeddah; 4000 Bedouins, British ships and airplanes involved [160610]; on the effort to convince Ottoman POW to defect and take up rebellion with Hashemite leader; case of Iraqi officer, Nuri-al-Said [160801]; Lawrence's new mandate after Aqaba, as official British agent with King Hussein and Prince Faisal's Arab army; aims concerted with Allenby's EEF for Palestine flank protection toward Syria [170718]; a feud between King Hussein, Prince Faisal and Syrian tribal commanders; Lawrence's intervention to doctor a letter to get the show on the road again; glimpses of post-war divisions [180904];

I

Immelmann, Max 'Blue Max'. German ace pilot killed after 15 victories. Nicknamed 'Blue Max' for being awarded first version of 'Pour le Mérite' in blue color for airmen. Was also known for Immelmann manoeuvre in aerial combat [160618];

India. Indian Army; one infantry and one cavalry corps; arrival at Marseilles; Meerut and Lahore divisions; command of Lgen Sir James Willcocks; Givenchy, Champagne, Estaire; Fr. *artillerie britannique*; Lord Crewe, Secy for India; two divisions to come to Basra [141020]; Indian Army infantry corps to leave France for Egypt and Mesopotamia; Sikhs; Punjabi Muslims; Pathans; Beluchis; Brahmans; Rajputs; Mahrattas; Madrasis; Dogra; Gurkhas [150214]; Mesopotamia: 6 Div under Townshend takes Amara; to go on to Baghdad (120 miles) [150928]; Indian Div pulled out of France;

cavalry stays [151025]; new command arrangements with Imperial Military Council in London for Indian divisions in Mesopotamia [160216]; the Muslim question; public opinion and British Indian officialdom on Arab in Middle East revolt against Constantinople Calif, splitting Muslims against Muslims [160627]; Mesopotamia Force under Maude, now under British control [161213]; Royal commission releases report; severe blame against leadership, British, Indian, civilian and military, and particularly, scandalous management of medical services in the operation [170703]; the Rowlatt Act in India to counter German and Bolchevik subversions [180114]; the Montagu-Chelmsford reforms for a split government between Viceroy and local legislatures does not satisfy Indian nationalists [180713]; Gandhi supports enlistment in Indian army to see Britain win the War [180714];

Indian Army Arrival in France [141020] Infantry departs France [150214][151025]; ;

UNITS:

Infantry Corps: (France)

Cavalry Corps (France)

6 Div (Poona): Mesopotamia; under Townshend in capture of Amara [150928];

Ireland. British policy of delaying «Home Rule» until after the war creates difficulties. Curragh Incident. Irish controversy [150201]; Arms delivery by disguised German ship to Tralee Bay for Irish rising of Volunteers. Sir Roger Casement behind the scheme of creating a brigade against British authorities [160420] his background with the Germans [160803]; ; EASTER RISING – Taking of General Post Office in Dublin; 20,000 British soldiers in Ireland; revolt smothered in a week. [160424]; 16 Div (Irish) is gassed in Hulluch, near Loos, suspectedly by Germans intent on raising political divisions; Royal Inniskillin Fusiliers hit hardest, with almost 2000 victims in Division [160427]; The Irish question in Parliament; John Redmond's deal with Lloyd George: splitting Unionists and Nationalist MPs [160724]; Execution of Roger Casement [160803]; Somme: taking of Ginchy by 16 Irish Div [160909]; COL Col Hadow (Brit) leaves regiment for rest in England; will be back in May [161127]; The Irish Conscription Crisis: massive protests prevent British Government from imposing Conscription in Catholic Ireland; Eamon de Valera [180418];

Italy. Why Italy remains out of the War; PM Giolitti [141205]; PM Salandra joins the Entente.

1915– [150426]; declares war against Austria-Hungary [150525]; First Isonzo [150623]; Gen Cadorna [150904]; Fourth Battle of the Isonzo, Gorizia [151118]; Austrian offensive in Trentino [160515]; the obvious effect of the Brusilov offensives of June 1916 on the Italian front; Asiago Plateau [160615]; success in three-week advance in Trentino also prevents move of Austro-Hungarian divisions to the East, helping Brusilov in his June 1916 offensive [160617]; Casualties of the Isonzo Front; Sixth Battle [160630,0906]; ITALY DECLARES WAR TO GERMAN EMPIRE [160828]; **Seventh Battle of Isonzo**; attritional results [160914]; **Eighth Isonzo** offensive: 20 Italian divisions attack Austro-Hungarian to extend Gorizia bridgehead; 25,000 casualties on each side [161010]; Cadorna's views on the advantages for the Italian side of equal attrition [161101]; Cadorna's iron discipline [161112]; Bethmann Hollweg's Peace Offer: an attempt to divide Allies of the Entente [161212];

1917– As governments respond to Wilson's request for their war aims, it becomes more evident that complete victory or defeat are the only possible outcome; no point of conciliation can be found [170110]; Wilson's famous speech to the Nations at War remembered for «Peace Without Victory»; exhorting halt in hostilities and diplomatic negotiations on equal footing [170122]; a tantrum by MP Bissolati for more guns [170210]; Foch-Cadorna consultation for potential invasion of Switzerland by Germanic Alliance and ensuing threats to France and Italy [170408]; the influence of sergent Bissolati in getting Trieste (Eleventh Isonzo); lack of Intelligence on enemy [170411]; Conference of Saint-Jean Maurienne; FM Sinono's refusal to negotiate with Austro-Hungary for terms of peace [170418]; meeting Bourbon-Palma and British PM in Paris; Carl of Austria informed of the refusal by Italy at the conference of Saint-Jean Maurienne for any terms of armistice [170420]; the **naval battle of the strait of Otrante** [170515]; Italy declares a Protectorate over South Albania area where it established a defensive perimeter to defend retreating Serbs; issues

with Entente, negotiations with Austria [170603]; ; **tenth battle of the Isonzo** [170608]; Cadorna's request to France and Great Britain for divisions and guns to finish off the Austrians-Hungarians in Italy; Pétain and Foch's favorable reply; Robertson's refusal at Lloyd George's support [170715]; Paris conference where Italians and French do not see eye-to-eye; Italians are determined to gain ground against Austria and do nothing else [170725]; **Eleventh battle of Isonzo**; near quarter-million casualties [170817]; **Caporetto**: German-Austrian-Hungarian operation with reinforcements has tremendous success with horrific loss of Italian personnel (10,000 dead, 30,000 wounded, 265,000 captures with 3,000 guns [171024]; Italian retreat to Tagliamento and Piave rivers [171026]; Caporetto: Foch must go to the rescue; 40 trains a day for Italy [171028]; Minister of Munitions Churchill behind the creation of Allied Maritime Transport Council (AMTC) to coordinate shipping among Allied nations; crucial step in prioritizing munitions transport; key step in creation of more Allied agencies for central coordination of assets [171104]; The Rapallo Conference, Italy; agreement for the creation of Supreme War Council in Versailles with high civilian government representatives; Lloyd George's influence in the Rapallo Convention [171105]; British War Cabinet allocating top priority for shipping to bringing American troops [171109]; Cadorna replaced by Diaz; establishes deep defence along Piave R.; Germanic reinforcements return to original task; front stabilized until Jun 1918 [171112]; Paris conference for the rearmament of Italy; Churchill meets reps for of national armament, Gen Dallioli (Italy), Loucheur (France), Gen Furse (GB) [171117]; Lenin's «Decree of Peace»; his decision to seek armistice; the army is disbanded and chaos is spreading; the Russians are out of the war! [171126]; consideration of consequence of Russian armistice (see **Supreme Council**) [171225]; **1918**–Wilson's «Fourteen Points» Speech: the death sentence of two empires [180108]; the Summit of Abbeville: Foch given additional responsibilities as overall commander of whole Western Front, including Italy; Versailles planning staff transferred to his HQ; Pershing agrees to transport of troops over materiel [180502];

Intelligence. The case of Malherbe. How a nest of German spies based in Switzerland spied on French military plans and dispositions with secret agents. Félix Malherbe is caught and executed by the French government. [161008];

J

Japan. Japanese navy [140921]; Emperor Taisho's speech on Pacific strategy, association with Entente [141208]; PM Okuma Shigenobu; The Twenty-One demands to China [150118]; German diplomatic attempts to get Japan to change side [160520]; China declares war to Germany and Austria-Hungary [170814]; Japanese Navy to Vladivostok [171226]; Balfour's Allied Diplomatic Conference of London resolves that allies must ask Japan and US to act against Central Powers' invasion of Russia through the East: Siberia [180316]; Japanese intervention in Vladivostok; occupation of Siberia [180517];

Jaurès, Jean: Socialist leader assassinated [140731];

Jellicoe, Adm. John Commander-in-Chief of the British Grand Fleet. Poised for Battle Royal in North Sea [140816]; escort for first Canadian contingent [141003]; protection of Scapa Flow [141008]; See **Battle of Jutland**; Grand Fleet and Adm Beatty's Cruiser Fleet, forward, intercept German High Seas Fleet as it attempts to exit the North Sea [160531]; the idea of convoys has many fathers [170211]; PM creates War Policy Committee excluding military leaders; opposed to Haig's plans for deep penetration in Flanders; want action in Palestine and Italy; J agrees with Haig on account of deadly dangerous Belgian ports used by German submarines [170619]; Conference on war strategy opposes military (Robertson, Haig, Jellicoe) to civilian War Policy Cabinet in head-on clash; Haig promises restraint in casualties; Robertson refuses to send guns to Italy; PM outraged he cannot stop [170620-1]; PM not pleased with Adm Jellicoe [171125]; PM dismisses Jellicoe on Christmas Eve [171224];

Joffre, Gén. Joseph. France. *Envoie la Cinquième armée vers la Belgique*

[140815]; *réassigne les corps* [140820]; Lanzerac's Battle for survival [140822]; His Instruction générale No 2; End of Plan XVII [140826]; Meeting French; «Papa»; Guise [140829]; Miracle of the Marne; glory [140911]; strategy in Race to the Sea [140920]; asking Belgium to hold Channel ports [140929]; *Première Bataille d'Artois* [141001]; December Plan [141214];

1915– Plans de Joffre pour 'grignoter' en 1915; *importance des chemins de fer; Aisne et Champagne* [150217]; conflict in strategy in France between Joffre, Foch and French [150307]; «Papa» criticized for Artois offensive [150602]; conferences of Calais and Chantilly [150706-7]; style compared [1509]; *Faillite complète de la campagne printemps-automne dans Artois-Champagne, et contre le Saillant de Noyon; réputation personnelle gravement atteinte* [151013]; his turnabout in favor of Dardanelles [151018]; his influence on the British Cabinet to form a War Committee [151029]; seven stars [151202]; Joffre's Chantilly conference; munitions as the key issue for 1916; concerted offensives on all major fronts; central coordination [151205,7];

1916– Verdun; Joffre at GHQ woken up by PM Briand [160224]; *Joffre à Verdun; son Ordre du Jour historique: «Vous serez de ceux dont on dira: 'Ils ont barré aux Allemands la route de Verdun'»* [160311]; Joffre in London; his forced and half-baked position on Salonica; Lloyd George's skepticism on his plans for Somme [160609]; Joffre-Haig conversations; British must close the gap as French troops are well forward; comparison in tactics [16073]; réunion de Chantilly de 1916; *Joffre en perte d'influence auprès du gouvernement, qui veut minimiser «le pouvoir de Chantilly»* [161115]; *Lyautey devient ministre de la Guerre; cherche à écarter Joffre du commandement; remanie les pouvoirs du GQG de Chantilly* [161214]; Joffre named Maréchal de France and Nivelle promoted to Commander of the French Forces on the Western Front [161226];

K

Keable, Cpl Joseph, VC. Canada. First French Canadian to win VC at Neuville Vitasse, near Arras. [180608];

Kemal, Mustafa. Turkish Officer of great reputation. Colonel in Gallipoli [150721]; resolute action in new command of defence of Sluvla Bay landing [150809]; hero of Gallipoli defence [160108];

Kemp, Edward. Canada. Minister of Militia. Speech in Parliament on the needs for recruitment and policy options within compulsory service [170625]; appointed as Minister of the Overseas Military Forces of Canada (OMFC) [180205]; creation of the Overseas Militia Council in London; Albert Kemp oversees; LGen Turner is C. of S. [180504]; Borden in London is informed by Currie on what is needed from the Imperial Conference; this is instrumental in the creation of Imperial Cabinet sub-committee for Dominions to express views [180613-4]; Currie succeeds, through Kemp's representation at War Office, in obtaining that a Canadian Section be installed at Haig's GHQ; clear statements of exigencies accompany Bgen Embury who will represent Kemp's and Currie's views as national authorities for CEF [180619];

Kerr, John, VC with Edmonton 49th, chief bayonet man on advance in Flers-Courcellette front against German redoubt [160916];

Keyes, Commodore Roger. British. Naval demining expert and commander, is instrumental in convincing High Command that a second try must be made to cross the Strait at Dardanelles [1510];

Kiev Kanal [140629]

Kiggell, MGen. Lancelot. British. Kitchener's offer to Hamilton to send Deputy CIGS as CoS in Dardanelles [151002];

Kitchener, Marshal Lord Horatio. Experience in Middle East; British Secretary of State for War; [140805]; recruitment of Volunteers, planning for 'Kitchener's armies' [140808]; Visits Joffre and Lanzerac [140831]; Kitchener's Armies [140930]; views on motor MG [141023]; visit by King, Queen and K. in Salisbury Plains; K's statement to Joffre on reinforcements [141104]; govt's rep in House of Lords [141126][150915]; Appoints Seely [150201]; the notion of attrition [150225]; keeps his job in Asquith coalition [150521]; weakened by Dardanelles committee [150528] Kitchener goes to Dardanelles [151107]; Bonar Law's objection to continuation in

Dardanelles [151108]; K's report from Dardanelles introduces withdrawal as option [151115]; K. and Robertson involved in convincing Haig that relief must be provided for Verdun in form of diversionary attack [160328]; invited to Russia by Grand Duke Nicholas [160513]; at the House of Lords to explain Conscriptio[n] [160523]; Kitchener lost at sea as he departs for a visit to Russia; HMS *Hamshire* hits a mine in North Sea. [160605]; Lloyd George becomes Secretary of War to replace Kitchener [160704];

Kluck, Gen. Von. Fr. Commandant de la Première Armée allemande; Belgique [140814];

Komagata Maru: Japanese merchant ship; Incident in Vancouver [140724];

Konigsberg. Prussia. Present-day Kaliningrad. Eighth German Army defending [140817];

Kosovo, Battle of (1389) [140628]

Krasnik. Russia. German manoeuvres at [140824];

Kressenstein, Gen Von. Ottoman-German operation against Suez Canal [150203];

Krupp. German industrial cannon makers; revolution in siege artillery; 'Big Berthas' in Liège [140807];

Kühlmann, Richard von. Germany. Foreign Minister for Chancellor Michaelis. Conducts indirect diplomatic surveys as to the real intent of the Entente allies on the question of Belgium; all evidence point to a strongly shared policy among Allies that unconditional surrender will never be relinquished [170921]; appointed Chancellor himself after von Hertling; his speech in Reichstag, repudiated by Conservatives and instrumental in his later dismissal by High Command [180624]; forced to resign by the High Command as being too realist [180709];

L

La Boisselle. First Somme [140927];

Laffargue, French Captain André. Thinker on tactics, precursor of Storm troopers in his *Étude sur l'Attaque*. [150804];

Langle de Cary. Cmdr Fourth French army. Fr. Premiers signes de déséquilibre dans les armées françaises du nord [140820];

Lake, Lgen Sir Percy. British with Canadian background. Becomes commander of Mesopotamia theatre replacing Nixon. Tasked to raise siege of Kut and free Indian troops surrounded there [160110];

Lansdowne, 5th Marquess of (Henry Petty-Fitzmaurice). Venerable and experienced Lansdowne, member of Asquith Cabinet, presents a letter to Asquith asking to consider negotiations for a settlement of war. [161116]; makes public a letter stating that continuing in the war is a crime «differing only in degree from that of the criminals who provoked it.» [171129];

Laon. France. Perte de [140902];

Laurier, Sir Wilfrid. Leader of the Opposition, Canada [140801]; *parole de guerre* [151210]; O.D. Skelton' *Life and Letters of Sir Wilfrid Laurier* on recruitment in Québec and Ontario [160323]; On Regulation 17 [160510]; Introduction of the *Military Service Act*; Laurier opposes [170518]; Meeting Borden-Laurier: Laurier refuses to be part of a coalition government and wishes to oppose Conscriptio[n] in a referendum election [170529]; On second reading of the *Military Service Bill*, Laurier takes the stand that he will fight the passing of the law by demanding that a referendum election be held before any decision taken; all now know that it will not pass smoothly [170618]; *Military Service Bill* passed in House of Commons, to become law on 29 August 1917; Laurier wants general election [170724]; Borden ends Parliament; he goes to general elections on Dec 17, 1917, with three main instruments: *The Military Service Act*; the *Wartime Elections Act* and the *Soldiers Voters Act* [171006];

Lanzerac, Gen. French. Cmdt of Fifth army. At Marne; Joffre unhappy with [140903];

Latvia. Bails out of Russia: Declaration of Independence; an acrid flight of freedom [180112];

Lawrence, Captain Thomas Edward («T.E.»). British. Intelligence officer with Arabic experience as pre-War archeologist in Syria.

1915– Meeting with Al-Faroki, representing Damascus rebels, leads

to pro-Arab policy and contacts with Sharif Hussein [151010]; London policy decision for Cairo Bureau to approach Sharif of Mecca for talks on association with Arab malcontents [151019];

1916– Assigned to Mesopotamia on mission to find Arab dissidents to undermine German-Ottoman operations in Kut and bribe corruptible Turkish officers with large sums of money [160325]; Lawrence taken to Jeddah by Ronald Storr, Oriental Secretary of British Agency, in Cairo; meets three sons of King Hussein, Princes Abdullah, Ali and Faisal; immediately recognized as cultured Arabist and abstemious, they want him as British liaison officer; stays in Rabegh [161015]; **1917**– Arab Revolt involved in blowing up Ottoman railroads in Hijaz; Lawrence involved [170325]; Departure from Wejh for the assault of Aqaba; recruiting of more Arab chieftains and camel troopers; his motives for not informing British Cairo HQ and letting Arabs have their own victory; uncertain of his own fate: hero or court martial? [170531]; Allenby being sent to replace Murray in Egypt; PM asks him for 'Jerusalem at Christmas' [170601]; victory in Aqaba; riding to Ismaelia, train to Cairo; greeted with the incredible news; further plans to continue with an Arab army on the right flank of the Egyptian Expeditionary Force to Syria [170711-2]; Lawrence's new mandate after Aqaba, as official British agent with King Hussein and Prince Faisal's Arab army; aims concerted with Allenby's EEF for Palestine flank protection toward Syria [170718]; Faisal named Supreme Commander of Arab armies; relationship with Hussein and Faisal [170728]; His 27 personal rules [170805]; Jaffa taken by Allenby, s EEF [171116];

1918– Arab Revolt involved in the defence of Talifeh show cohesion that makes Lawrence satisfied with progress [180123]; formation of two wings of the Arab Revolt army: a conventionally organized Northern Arab Army under the command of Djaffer Pasha, advised by a British officer, and the light camel cavalry wing, where Lawrence remains; the two wings operate in different ways but coordinate their movements for the next objective: the city of Maan [180203]; Smuts reports positively on Palestine Front; recommends pursuit to Constantinople in view of German negotiations in Brest Litovsk [180215]; crisis of confidence when faced with Arab corruption [180220]; Allenby on a roll, from Jaffa to Amman, then planning for Damascus [180226]; the battles of Amman and Maan [180411]; delays imposed by major British troop withdrawal to the France front; concern for Faisal [180525]; a feud between King Hussein, Prince Faisal and Syrian tribal commanders; Lawrence's intervention to doctor a letter to get the show on the road again; glimpses of post-war divisions [180904];

Le Cateau. France. *Armée anglaise* [140818];

Lemnos. Island of Dardanelles, used as staging base by Allied forces [150223];

Lenin, Russian Communist leader. Bolshevik agitations; general unrest following recent military reverses in the Jul 1917 Brusilov defeat; government paralysed [170717]; Lenin seizes the moment when Kerensky tries to bring balance to the socialist contenders; Trotsky commands the armed St Petersburg Soviet and Lenin proclaims Kerensky 'counter-revolutionary'; October revolution takes two days [171023]; Lenin's «Decree of Peace»; his decision to seek armistice; the army is disbanded and chaos is spreading; the Russians are out of the war! [171126]; Lenin faced with not having won a majority for First Constituent Assembly; must work at derailing the process of Soviet representatives meeting in Petrograd [171209]; *la Résolution de Lénine «Guerre et Paix» fait du parti bolchévique le Parti Communiste* [180307]; The Basic Socialist Law of the Russian Socialist Federative Republic; a constitution for the Council of People's Commissars [180710]; Lenin shot and wounded by Fanny Kaplan; executed [180820];

Lettonia. Lettonia and Courland fall under German influence [180318];

Lettow-Vorbeck, Von. "The Lion of Africa." Skillful guerilla operator, fights whole length of the War with German and African Imperial forces to maintain German presence on continent and preserve protectorates. Gen Smuts' campaigns of 1916 against all German protectorates of Africa [170429]; Lettow hero of African guerilla pushed to SE Tanganyika [170429]; his guerilla operations of the summer of 1917 [170810]; Battle of Negomano; pushed out of

Tanganyika by superior British forces, crosses Rovuma R into Portuguese Mozambique where he raids Negomano, chasing the garrison out [171128]; vorbeck

Liddell Hart, Basil. Historian. On battle of Yser [141018]; on Battle of Gallipoli [160109]; own experience in the Somme [160717]; views on Falkenhayn's style, being too prudent [160906];

Liège. City in Belgium. German forces facing [140804]; Big Berthas lay siege [140807]; First Somme [140927];

Lille. France. *repli de Anvers* [141001]; Arras [141005]; taken [141011];

Lipsett, Mgen Louis James. Welsh British officer serving in Canadian Corps. While Commander of 3 Cdn Div, visit of Winston Churchill in Canadian Corps, Jan 1918 [180211];

Literature, Publications. John Buchan's *Greenmantle*, on British vs German Intelligence and Middle East Muslim alliances [151201]; Timothy Findley's *The Wars* [160227];

Lloyd George, David. Chancellor of the Exchequer, Great Britain; Quote on Canada's involvement in the war [140801]; Speech at Queen's Hall [140919];

1915– Rep at Allied conference; meeting Robertson; Easterners vs Westerners argument [150207]; Liberal Asquith coalition; becomes minister of Munitions [150519] appointed Minister of Munitions by the Munitions Act (1915) [150606]; conférence de Boulogne avec Albert Thomas; munitions [150619]; his position against Kitchener's endorsement of Joffre's autumn 1915 offensives in Artois and Champagne [150915]; succeeds in having Murray appointed as CIGS to reduce Kitchener's control of Cabinet [150926]; *association avec Briand pour préserver Salonica* [151204]; Joffre's Chantilly conference; munitions as the key 1916 issue [151205]; speech blames own government in H of C [151221];

1916– Munition production at high capacity; problem of faulty fuses [160619]; becomes Secretary of War to replace Kitchener [160704]; The Irish question in Parliament; John Redmond's deal with Lloyd George: splitting Irish Party between Unionists and Nationalist MPs [160724]; statement of «...to a knock out», making clear that American mediation or negotiations are out of the question at this stage, thereby refuting Woodrow Wilson's attempts to broker a peace deal [160929]; Conference of Chantilly and Paris; the Robertson trip to Russia cancelled [161117]; LG's recommendations for a three-man War Cabinet excluding PM Asquith [161202]; Aitken's role in the promotion of Conservative Leader Bonar Law to become kingmaker in the Second Liberal Coalition [161203]; Asquith toppled by LG; Second Liberal Coalition [161206]; Lloyd George's first speech in parliament after becoming PM; crisis government: no longer a democracy as we knew it [161219];

1917– PM Lloyd George preparing a conference in Rome where he wishes to influence Allied military strategy [170105]; back from conference: has not succeeded in bending the will of the Allied governments, all influenced by the military leadership determined to continue in priority in France; he has no choice but to back Haig and Nivelle [170108]; the idea of convoys has many fathers [170211]; Sets the stage for an Imperial Conference [170208]; Conference of Saint-Jean Maurienne; Italian refusal to negotiate with Austro-Hungary [170418]; the work of the PM's Parliamentary Secretary for Shipping, Leo C. Money, mathematician, who computed the lower risk probabilities for convoy shipping in North Atlantic [170530]; Creation of a War Policy Committee that does not include military leaders; Haig's plan for Flanders; clash in view between civilian and military leadership; War Policy Committee (PM, Curzon, Milner, Bonar Law, and Smuts) want action in Palestine and Italy [170619]; Conference on war strategy opposes military (Robertson, Haig, Jellicoe) to civilian War Policy Cabinet in head-on clash; Haig promises restraint in casualties; Robertson refuses to send guns to Italy; PM outraged he cannot stop [170620-1; Cadorna's request to France and Great Britain for divisions and guns to finish off the Austrians-Hungarians in Italy; Robertson's refusal at Lloyd George's support [170715]; Chancellor Michaelis' censure of moderates in Reichstag on 19 Jul 1917; Lloyd George's reply to the speech [170719,21]; Paris conference where Italians and French do not see eye-to-eye; Italians are determined to gain ground against Austria and do nothing else [170725]; letter to Pres Wilson asking for an Allied

Supreme Council of Heads of State; he would like to direct military strategy from there [170903]; Lloyd George's undermining of Haig [171011]; Lloyd George and the decision to implement the Supreme War Council against the advice of the War Office; his rationale [171119]; replacement of Painlevé as prime minister of France; *Clemenceau devient Chef du Cabinet*; at 76, he comes to fight tiredness and relaxation wherever he finds them [171121]; meeting with Clemenceau as prime minister of France for the first time; good impression of *Le Tigre* [171201]; PM dismisses Jellicoe on Christmas Eve [171224]; PM involved in removing close senior staff officers near Haig; resentment at such unwarranted interference [171230];

1918– Lloyd George's rousing speech of Caxton Hall [180106]; a very cheery party: the tobacco bet [180108]; the feud with Robertson escalates into a War Office leak into newspapers about the Government's intent to give control of British reserves to the Supreme War Council; PM has to defend in Parliament; point of no return; Robertson is heretofore on borrowed time [180212]; Robertson fired; goes to Home Command [180219]; Borden in London is informed by Currie on what is needed from the Imperial Conference; this is instrumental in the creation of Imperial Cabinet sub-committee for Dominions to express views [180613-4]; the little jig of Danny Park: VICTORY! [181013];

Loomis, Lcol Frederick. CO 13 Bn, RHC Black Watch [150216];

Lorraine. France. [140819]; Cinquième Armée allemande du Prince Royal [140819];

Lougheed, James Alexander. Canada. Successful businessman and leading Conservative Senator from Calgary, Chairman of Military Hospital Commission, appointed by the Union Government to form a new Department to look after wounded Veterans [180202];

Louvain. Belgique. Progression allemande vers [140818]; Fr. Viol de la Belgique; politique de terreur [140825];

Lublin. German maneuvers at [140824];

Ludendorff, Gen Eric. Goes to Eastern Front [140824]; Russian offensive at Warsay [141019];

1916– Decisions on organization and tactics 'in depth' on Western Front; differ from Falkenhayn's principles of a stiff forward defence [160905]; his visit to Lens during the Battle of Hill 70 [170818];

1917– Letter to Chancellor Michaelis making clear that foreign policy has to be determined by military High Command [170913]; innovations credited to Ludendorff being studied by the French, including Storm Trooper techniques [170915]; Meeting of the German General Staff at Mons; planning the Spring offensive [171111];

1918– See **Battles of *Kaizerschlacht*** for 1918 ops MICHAEL, GEORGETTE and BLÜCHER. In mid-June 1918, Ludendorff is caught by a logistical quandary: his need to seize Reims for the railroad junctions there forces him to commit his front reserves to Champagne; his plan to force the move of Allied reserves to Champagne is not working; his plan to attack in Flanders against Hazebrouk cannot work if Foch's reserves do not move away; it suddenly appears as if his leg is in a trap [180618]; his personal crisis after the defeat of *Friedensturm* [180719]; Ludendorff at Spa: no words to describe the losses: his aim: establish a defence line [180909];

Lusitania, RMS. Cargo and passenger ship sunk by U-Boat [150507] Loss of 148 American citizens bring conflict in US Cabinet [150609]; US-German diplomacy [150710];

Luxemburg, Grand Duchy of. Pre-War occupation by German troops [140802]; crossing [140804];

Lyautey, Gen Louis-Hubert. France. Officier de l'armée coloniale d'Afrique, rappelé par Briand pour devenir Ministre de la Guerre après la mort de Galliéni; intervient dans les pouvoirs du GQG de Joffre, prend intérêt à Nivelle [161214]; Joffre named Maréchal de France and Nivelle promoted to Commander of the French Forces on the Western Front [161226];

Lys River: Belgium. BEF at [141015];

M

Mabeuge. City in France. In Schlieffen Plan [140804]; Fr. armée anglaise

à [140818];

Machine-gun. Maxim, Colt, Vickers guns (see **Machine-Gun Corps, Maxim, McBride**) Creation of British Machine-Gun Corps; Lewis air-cooled machine-rifle [151021]; Lloyd George's increase [151113]; introduction of concentration of machine-guns in mg companies for each Canadian brigade [160330];

Mackensen, Gen August Von. IX Army Eastern Front; surrounded, succeeds in escaping Russian trap [141113, 20]; Cmdr Southern Army Group; taking of Lublin and Cholm [150801]; command of Bulgarian Army [150922]; promoted Field Marshal in Jun 1915; Falkenhayn sent to take 'Quadruple Alliance' Front to submit Serbia, re-establish Constantinople railroad [150930]; Mackensen's success against Serbia [151120]; Port of Constanza falls to Mackensen; Romania has no port; Salonica action is having no effect on Romania, being squeezed between Falkenhayn and Mackensen [161022]; entry into Bucharest, Romania; open city [161206];

Macmillan, Margaret: Historian [140721];

Macpherson Dobell, Bgen Sir Charles. Canadian officer with British army, Inspector General of West African Field Force. Victory over German West African colony of Kamerun;

Mahan, Alfred. American naval historian [140816];

Mangin, Gen Charles. France. «The Butcher»: Division commander at Verdun against Fort Douaumont [160517]; Corps Commander and as «Le Forgeron»; striking when the iron is hot as Tenth Army Commander after the end of the battle of Amiens [180818];

Mansurian Lakes. Region between Prussia and Russia where initial battle happens. Calls BEF at Mons 'Contemptible Little army' [140823];

Marshal, Colonel George C. Chief Operations at Pershing's HQ; charged with transport of First US Army's nine oversized divisions from St. Mihiel to Argonne; too big to fail!

Maurice, Mgen Sir Frederick. British. Director Military Operations at War Office. His information on the decrease of French participation in the Somme plan [160519]; a letter from Haig asking to help keep politicians out of military planning [170207]; the Maurice Affair: challenging the PM in the Press on numbers of troops in France; polarization of the Liberal Party; cashiered [180507];

Maude, Gen Frederick Stanley. In command of the Mesopotamia offensive from mid-1916; spent the summer re-building the force broken by reverses in April 1916; In Dec 1916, ready to start toward Baghdad; with Mesopotamia Expeditionary Force (MEF) under British control [161213]; Maude progressing at a slithering crawl up the Tigris [170212]; in Baghdad! 9,000 Ottoman POWs; future plans for Caucasus [170311]; death of Gen Maude by cholera in Baghdad; his distinguished March 26, 2021 (12:36pm) service in the war [171118];

Maxim, Hiram. Inventor of machine-gun models. [141013] water-cooled German and British Vickers, so influential in the First World War, come from him [151021]; death [161124];

Maxse, Lgen Igor. British. Commander of 18 Div, XVIII Corps and Inspector General of Training; credited with innovative training and tactical methods in British Army copied and adapted from observation of French and German practices [180510];

McBride, Herbert W. Canada. American citizen, Officer 21 Bn involved in rifle marksmanship and machine-gun development; author of *A Rifleman went to War* and *Emma Gees*. [151012];

McDougall, Bgen Alex. Canada. Appointment of Col McDougall as DG Timber Operations in Great Britain and France [170301];

McKeever, Andrew. Canada. Pilot on RFC Bristol F.2 [170610];

McMahon, Sir Henry. British High Commissioner to Egypt [150601]; London policy decision to approach Sharif of Mecca for talks on association with Arab malcontents; first letter to King Hussein [151019,24]; how McMahon is being blinded from London in the Sykes-Picot agreement [160104,0202];

McNaughton, Andrew. Canadian artillery officer. The Papineau-McNaughton conversations on Canadian nationalism [161027]; becomes Canadian Corps Counter-Battery Staff Officer, connected with British scientific authorities in realm of artillery fire [170127];

McRae, Lcol John. Author of *In Flanders Fields*. [150503,1208]

Medical services. Frostbites in Gallipoli [151127]; Canadian Nurse

Dorothy Cotton in Murmansk [160205];

Mediterranean Sea. British-French Pre-War treaty on [140802]; *Goeben and Breslau* [140810];

Mercer, Bgen M.S. Canada. Cmdr 1 Bde; on the line [150303]; killed as GOC 3 Div, at Sanctuary Wood. [160602];

Mesopotamia. Ottoman empire. (See **Battles of/Mesopotamia**) Oil there; *Pétrole pour l'empire britannique* [140926]; India Office; intentions contre Bassorah, Abadan [140926]; Indian brigade at Abadan; Lord Crewe, Secr for India; two divisions to come to Basra [141020]; Anglo-Persian Oil Company (later BP) [141022]; second British division in Basra [141121]; Brit 6 Div sent to Mesopotamia (Gen Townshend) to join Indian Army [150212];

Messiny, French Minister of War. Union Sacrée [140828];

Meteorology. Efforts at predicting weather important to air forces [160505];

Metz. French Fortress [140805]; Combats [140820];

Meuse, River. Belgium and France. Germans blow bridges [140807]; German progress [140811]; [140818]; Fr. Premiers signes de déséquilibre dans les armées françaises du nord [140820]; Opportunity missed by northern armies [140821];

Michaelis, Georg. Undersecretary of State in Prussian administration, brought up to replace Bethmann Hollweg as Germany's Chancellor by conservative dictatorship, although with no experience in foreign affairs. Immediately kills the inter-party committee of the Reichstag for parliamentary resolution for war aims negotiations [170714]; his censure of moderates in Reichstag on 19 Jul 1917; Lloyd George's reply to the speech [170719,21]; Ludendorff's letter making clear that foreign policy has to be determined by military High Command [170913]; Michaelis replaced by Georg von Hertling [171101];

Middle East: The British Bunsen Committee to report on the Middle East and propose a policy on ME after the war; Sir Mark Sykes, Gen Sir Charles Calwell are members [150409]; see Buchan [151201]; The Sykes-Picot agreement; the mismanagement of consultations in this agreement [160104,0202];

Military Cross (MC). Creation [141230];

Millerand. France. PM; visite Artois [150414];

Milner, Great Britain. Minister and High Official; in Lloyd George's War Policy Committee [170619];

Mines and minefields. Raid on Yarmouth [141102]; shore bombardments of Scarborough, Whitby and Hartlepool [141216]; submarine net in the Dardanelles [150725];

Mitteuropa. German September Program [140928];

Moltke, The Great. German General XIXth C. [140803];

Moltke, The Young. Chief of Imperial German General Staff. Fr. Premiers signes de déséquilibre dans les armées françaises du nord [140820]; collapse in the Battle of the Marne [140907]; replacement by Falkenhayn [140914];

Monash, Gen John. Australia. The astonishing successes of the 33rd US National Guard Division in Vaux Wood and of Australian General John Monash in Hamel, showing skills in interarm cooperation and use of surprise with great effect [180705]; reputation; preparations for the battle of Amiens [180728];

Money, Sir Leo Chiozza. The work of computation of risk in the convoy system [170530];

Monro, Gen Sir Charles. British. Appointed Commander Gallipoli to replace Hamilton [151017];

Mons. Belgium. BEF at [140823];

Montreal. [140923]; anti-conscription [150724];

Munitions. Problems; Lloyd George to France [141012]; creation of British Munitions Committee; Kitchener's reluctance. [150411]; Munitions Act creates Ministry and minister Lloyd George [150606]; British 'Big Gun Program' [150813]; Joffre's Chantilly conference; munitions as the key 1916 issue [151205]; Haig, Lloyd George, Bonal Law and Robertson agree on a plan fr 1916 [160131];

Murray, MGen Sir Archibald. British. Chief of Staff of the BEF, becomes CIGS after terrible failure of battle of Loos. His appointment reduces role of Kitchener in Cabinet [150926]; as CinC of Egypt Expeditionary Force, after retreat from Gallipoli (see **Egypt and Battles of/Middle East**), unsuccessful attack in First Battle of Gaza

[170326]; Second Battle of Gaza: set piece battle is a severe defeat for the British with heavy casualties (6,500); Murray' reputation damaged [170417]; Allenby being sent to replace Murray in Egypt; PM asks him for 'Jerusalem at Christmas' [170601];

N

Namur. Belgique. Bataille des Frontières [140818]; Fr. Premiers signes de déséquilibre dans les armées françaises du nord [140820]; Opportunity missed by northern armies [140821];

Nancy. French Fortress [140805]; Combats [140820]; Grand Couronné and N. [140903];

Naumann, Victor. German publicist [140701]

Newburn, Mgen S.C. Canada. Minister of Militia in Canadian Union Government. The Siberia Affair: Borden incensed that the British Government sends a request for troops through Colonial Secretary and Governor General when himself and Minister of Militia are in London; stalls on answer until amends are made [180712]; Haig's very cold reception in his visit of GHQ [180717];

Newfoundland. Blue Putties leave Canadian Contingent in Salisbury to join Brit. 29 Div [141223]; (See **Battles of/Gallipoli**) to Gallipoli with 29 Div [150820-1]; Evacuated out of Suvla [151218]; Final evacuation out of Gallipoli [160107-8]; 29 Div leaves Egypt for France [160314]; near Beaumont Hamel with 29 Div's 88 Bde (see **Battles of/Somme**) preparing for summer of op [160405]; last letter; death of 'Mayo' Lind [160629]; First day of the Somme offensive; Beaumont Hamel; atrocious casualties [160702]; 104 days after Beaumont Hamel, the Newfoundland regiment is in battle in the Somme at Gueudecourt [161012]; (See **Battles of/Arras**); Third Army, VI Cors, 29 Div: at Monchy-le-Preulx [170414];

New Zealand. [NZ] Original brigade redirected to Cairo with Australian div [141203] [150116]; increase of division, ANZACS formed in Cairo; training for Phase II of Dardanelles, Gallipoli [150220]; Gen Godley [150808]; Gen Murray advances with Egyptian Expeditionary Force into the Sinai to control El Arish to prevent Ottoman incursions; Australian and New Zealand cavalry and brigade of camelry involved [161224]; ANZAC battle of Polygon Wood [170926]; Allenby takes Bersheeba; ANZAC cavalry key to success [171031];

Nicholas II: See Romanov

Nicholas, Grand Duke Peter. Commander of the Russian army groups [140817]; his loss of command to Nicholas II; Viceroy of Caucasus [150905];

Nivelle, Gen. France.

1916– Cmdr *Deuxième Armée* in Verdun after Pétain. (See also **Battles of/Verdun**). Battle for Fleury in Verdun; phosgene gas introduced; Nivelle's *«Ils ne passeront pas!»* [160623]; turn of events after the start of the Somme; considerable reduction of German pressure; the attack on Souville [160711]; *reprise totale de Verdun; trois jours de bataille; 11,000 prisonniers et 115 canons pris; pertes totales de 700,000 hommes; techniques d'artillerie* [161215]; Joffre named Maréchal de France and Nivelle promoted to Commander of the French Forces on the Western Front [161226];

1917– *L'Homme de l'Heure*; Hero of Victory of Verdun, receives Canadian delegation; impresses [170103]; PM Lloyd George back from conference in Rome: has not succeeded in bending the will of the Allied governments, all influenced by the military leadership determined to continue in priority in France; he has no choice but to back Haig and Nivelle in 1917 [170108]; innovation of French 155mm GPF with long barrel, outranging equivalent German guns, allowing counter-battery without riposte; use of 'mobile beaten zones' and 'rolling barrages' to protect infantry on the attack [170117]; Nivelle in London to discuss 1917 operations; LG agrees with his plans; Haig has objections [170115]; His visit to Vimy, meeting Haig there, and Currie, who was at Verdun a month ago [170216]; the Haig-Nivelle feud on status of British group of armies involved in Battle of Arras [170313]; scorched earth in the German retreat to the Hindenburg Line [170314]; Nivelle has to face criticism for his stance, continuing after the retreat of the Germans of up to 20 miles on a 100-mile front; his French army group commanders and Haig

want the op cancelled; French Assembly gets involved in forcing Nivelle to change his plan; his offer of resignation on 18 March [170318]; the Nivelle affair erupts in French Assemblée and the Briand government is toppled; new government formed by Ribot; Painlevé becomes Minister of War; difficulties in sustaining Nivelle as CinC [170319] Le 5 avril, Président Poincaré, le premier ministre Ribot, le ministre de la Guerre Painlevé, et certains généraux d'état-major, vont implorer Nivelle, au GQG de Compiègne, pour que, en considération de la déclaration de guerre imminente des États-Unis et de la critique énorme qui se dresse contre son plan, Nivelle interrompe sa campagne déjà commencée dans le nord; il offre sa démission que le Haut Commandement se refuse d'accepter [170405]; (See **Battles of/Chemin des Dames**.)

Nixon, Gen John E. British. Commander of Mesopotamia Expeditionary Force [150212]; battle of Qurna [150412-3]; Royal commission releases report; severe blame against leadership, British, Indian, civilian and military, and particularly, scandalous management of medical services in the operation [170703];

Northcliffe, Lord (A.C.W Harmworth, 1st Viscount). Newspaper magnate in London involved as critique and agent of British Government. Munition scandal [150411][150514,21]; Gen Charteris (BEF Int) on the pros and cons of 'Press Lords' Beaverbrook and Northcliffe distributing information and propaganda in America with mixed results on Canadian recruitment an American opinion [170403]; becomes Director of Propaganda in Enemy Countries [171216];

North Sea. [140629]

Novian. Involved in crossing Channel of 1 Div [150216];

O

Oil. India Office; intentions contre Bassorah, Abadan [140926]; Indian brigade at Abadan; Lord Crewe, Secr for India; two divisions to come to Basra [141020]; Anglo-Persian Oil Company (later BP) [141022]; second British division in Basra [141121]; the battle for Baku of September 1918 [180915];

Ostend. Belgium [140929]; repli de Anvers [141001,09];

Otter, Gen William. Canada. Chargé des camps d'étrangers de nations ennemies au Canada; Petawawa [141130];

Ottoman: Sultan Abdul Ahmid II in 1898 [140722]; *Breslau* and *Goeben* cross Bosphorus into Black Sea, threatening Sebastopol and Odessa [141027];

Ourthe, River. Belgium; German blow bridges of [140807];

Ovillers. First Somme [140927];

P

Painlevé, Paul. France. Minister of War with Ribot government of March 1917. Succeeds in maintaining Nivelle as CinC after the Nivelle Affair in parliament [170319]; intervention auprès de Nivelle [170405];

Painvin, George. France. Paleontologist working on decryption of German «ADFGVX» Code succeeds in finding solution on June 2nd, 1918; Foch uses the transcription on June 9 to foresee the move of German formation around Compiègne and block its advance [180609];

Palestine. Ottoman-German operation against Suez Canal [150203]; Damascus Protocol [150601]; McMahon's controversial letters to Hussein [151024]; (See **Battles of/Middle East**)

Papineau, Lt Talbot Mercer. First MC to Canadians for trench raid action [150228]; letter to Bourassa from the Front; published in *Le Devoir*; exhortation to join [160728]; the Papineau-McNaughton conversations on Canadian nationalism [161027];

Paris. Germans aiming at [140805]; Joffre's *Grand Quartier Général (GQG)* [140818];

Perley, George H.: Canadian High Commissioner to Great Britain [140714]; (See **Canada/Government**) recruitment of 3 million men [150128]; creation of Ministry of Overseas Forces [161030]; CHC becomes Minister of Overseas Military Forces of Canada (OMFC); Sam Huges does not approve of the nomination [161030]; acquisition

of Argyl House, on Regent Street, in London, as Headquarters for Canadian Forces Overseas; Gen Turner is GOC Overseas Canadian Forces with full staff; the place soon becomes known as Ivory Tower [170124]; Sir Edward Kemp appointed Minister of Canadian Force Overseas; Perley returns to limited functions of HC [180205];

Pershing, Gen John Jack 'Black Jack'. United States. Commander-in-Chief of the United States Expeditionary Force to Europe. His arrival in France [170615]; (See **United States; Battles of/Last Hundred Days**) claims for more troops and more transport [171220]; (See **Supreme war Council**) Foch named in authority to conduct overall control of operations in France in the name of Supreme War Council; national Commanders-in-Chief Pétain, Haig and Pershing, to follow his plans [180403]; the Summit of Abbeville: Foch given additional responsibilities as overall commander of whole Western Front, including Italy; Versailles planning staff transferred to his HQ; Pershing agrees to transport of troops over materiel [180502]; Pershing refuses Foch's suggestion of strategy; wants to remain at St.Mihiel where his divisions at learning the ropes; Australians at St.Quentin [180831]; sucs at St.Mihiel [180912,7]; for Argonne, see **United States/Army**).

Pétain, Gen Philippe. France.

1916– Commander of Second Army; receives command for defence of Verdun [160226]; see **Battles of/Verdun**.

1917– becomes Cmdr of Group of Army, then GHQ CGS; becomes CinC of French armies (GHQ) after demise of Nivelle [170516]; Pétain's *Directive No. 1* to address immediate requirements; he has no intent to go on the offensive until the Americans are in France [170519]; the so-called mutinies; Pétain's generous policy [170624]; *Directive No 3: établit les nouvelles disposition pour la récupération, le changement de culture, et le repos des armées* [170704]; Return to Verdun; period of soldier strikes and protests finished after pause in operations; must go back to work [170819]; une nouvelle opération à Verdun assurée de succès pour remonter le moral [170826]; innovations credited to Ludendorff being studied by the French, including Storm Trooper and defence construction techniques [170915]; Clemenceau confronts Pétain over his reforms and defensive posture [171218]; Pétain's *Directive No 4: défense mobile en profondeur* [171222];

1918– *Mise au point sérieuse entre Pétain et Foch sur la notion de réserves communes entre les armées nationales en France; Pétain s'y oppose et empêche même Foch de travailler sur de tels plans* [180125]; (see **Battles of/Kaiserschlacht** for operational movements between 21 Mar and 4 Aug 1918); Foch named central 'coordinator' between French and British C-in-Cs by Milner and Clemenceau at Doullens [180326]; Op MICHAEL (21 Mar-5 Apr 1918) Foch named in authority to conduct overall control of operations in France in the name of Supreme War Council; national Commanders-in-Chief Pétain, Haig and Pershing, to follow his plans [180403]; the Summit of Abbeville: Foch given additional responsibilities as overall commander of whole Western Front, including Italy; Versailles planning staff transferred to his HQ; Pershing agrees to transport of troops over materiel [180502]; (See: **FRANCE/Government, /FrenchArmy; Supreme War Council**)

Picot, François M.D. Georges. French Co-author of the famous Sykes-Picot agreement on post-War Middle-East [1604,0202];

Plumer, Gen Herbert C.O. Second Army. Canadians in Saint-Julien [150416]; Haig's Flanders' attack to begin; organization of armies: Gough's Fifth moved beside Plumer's Second [170730]; the battle of Menin Road: Plumer's one-day success [170920]; second attack [171004]; Haig wants more attacks on 9 and 12 Oct so that front line are not in water during winter [171007]; sent to Italy, replaced by Rawlinson [171108];

Poincaré, Raymond. President of France [140712]; in St.Petersburg [140720]; Union sacrée [140828]; visite d'Artois [150414]; new Briand government [151026]; intervention auprès de Nivelle [170405];

Pohl, Adm Von. German. Commander of High seas Fleet resigns with interruption of USW [150920];

Poland. Discussions between Germany Foreign Minister and Austro-

Hungarian rep on the fate of Poland at the end of the war [151111]; negotiations with Governor General of Warsaw to gain 1 million soldiers in return for future status for a united Poland [161105]; the attraction of a Russian offer to Poland [170330]; *La France reçoit les Polonais volontaires pour une armée polonaise en formation* [170604]; Cérémonie de remise des drapeaux à l'Armée polonaise (Gen Haller) en France par le Président de la République [180623]; the six demands of the German Government on Poland; a fatuous shopping list of subjugations [180708]; Discussions in Berlin, in light of withdrawals in France, of the prospects of keeping territories gained in the Brest Litovsk Peace Accord with Russia; counting on Europe's need to have a buffer zone of controlled countries, including Poland, to contain a Russian rump of International Communism [180905];

Pope, Joseph. Sous-Secrétaire d'État aux affaires Extérieures du Canada. Défense du Canada [140912];

Portugal. Germany declared war on P. in March 1916; Joins Allies; intends to send contingent to France in few months [160807]; stats on participation [161020]; Africa: Battle of Negomano; Gen von Lettow-Vorbeck pushed out of Tanganyika by superior British forces crosses Rovuma R into Portuguese Mozambique where he raids Negomano, chasing the garrison out [171128]; Portugal brought into Allied cooperation in Mozambique: the De Castro - Deventer meeting [180129];

Princess Patricia's Canadian Light Infantry (PPCLI). Infantry Battalion. Lady Patricia; Hamilton Gault (see under name); [140801]; Attached to 80 Brigade; Camp Bustard [141116]; at Le Havre [141221]; CO Col Francis Farquhar, DSO, killed; Alderson's views on being out of CEF [150320]; Battle of Frezenberg [150508] PPCLI leaves 27 Brit Div, joins CEF [151215]; the Plunketts [160301];

Princip, Gavril. Serbian assassin of Duke Francis Ferdinand of Austria. [140628];

Prisoners of War. Convention de Genève (1886), Déclaration de Paris (1887) et Convention de la Hague (1899, Mod 1907) [150921];

Prittitz, Gen. German, Commands Eighth German Army [140817]; Replaced by Hindenburg [140824];

Prohibition. Provincial laws become part of Federal *War Measures Act* [180311];

Prussia. Germany. Eighth German Army there [140824];

Prussia, Prince William. Son of Wilhelm II, Army Commander of Fifth German Army [160503]; altercation with CoS in Aug 1916 at Verdun over Falkenhayn's leadership [160826];

Przemysl. Austro-Hungarian fortress on san R. 'Verdun' [141019]; [141129]; siege [141211]; Fall with 120,000 [150322]; retaken from Russians in battle of Galicia [150622];

Punik, Gen. Radomir. Chief of Generalstaff, Serbian army; facing Austro-Hungarian attack

Q

Québec. See Valcartier. [140908];

R

Raben, Major Ernst Von. German officer in Battle of Mount Mora, German Kamerun [150907];

Rainbow, HMCS: Canadian Ship [140724]

Railways. Russian-German [140817]; problem at Lodz [141123]; Pland de Joffre pour 'grignoter' en 1915; importance des chemins de fer; Aisne et Champagne [150217]; Sinews of War in France [150828]; how important railway improvement N. of Salonica were not made prior to Bulgaria's treaty with Triple alliance [150917]; FM Mackensen's 'Quadruple Alliance' Balkan Front to retake Constantinople railway [150930]; railway for artillery brought for Verdun offensive [151001]; Orient Railway as key issue in renewal of Alliance op in Serbia, Danube [151008]; Bersheeba [151010]; Orient railway back in op after Serbia cleared, reaching Romania and Greece, Alexandretta [160117]; the network of railroads created for the Somme offensive [160608]; Railway Operation Division: summary of British involvement in French network and takeover, in May 1916, of BEF-related railway management, construction and maintenance; Geddes

looking for more Dominion volunteer railroad troops [170220]; the arrival of American trains in France; 38,000 railcars with locomotives and rail [180309]; the immense US railroad naval guns used in the advance of Allied armies to destroy infrastructure [180906];

Rapallo Convention. The Rapallo Conference, Italy; Agreement for the creation of Supreme War Council in Versailles with high civilian government representatives coordinating strategy; Lloyd George's influence in the final Rapallo Convention [171105];

Rawlinson, Gen H.S. British. IV Corps [150303]; Commander Fourth Army; gets to command the British part of the Somme offensive [160225]; Different style from Haig [160416]; the germ of the idea of artillery barrage [160416]; «Tactical Notes»; Gen Kiggell's training for offensive action [160512]; Rawlinson's plan for Fourth Army for the Somme [160614]; Plumer sent to Italy, replaced by Rawlinson [171108]; Rawlinson to Supreme War Council, replacing Wilson; Birdwood temporarily replaces at Fourth Army]

Reese Europe, James. Black military musicians in France; leader of the *Brassband* with appealing style named *Jazz* [171228];

Repington, Colonel. TIMES journalist under Northcliffe. Munitions Scandal erupts [150514]

Ribot, Alexandre. France. Becomes *Président du Conseil* (PM) in March 1917 when the Nivelles Affair topples the Briand government; succeeds in maintaining Nivelles as CinC for the April campaign [170319]; intervention auprès de Nivelles [170405]; Clemenceau publishes a devastating criticism of the Ribot government; Radical socialist minister Malvy seen as protecting interests of labour to the detriment of the army [170722];

Richthofen, von. Germany. Famous pilot. Recalled from leave in June 1917 when 'Bloody April' for the allies is being reversed by the arrival of Bristol F.2 and S.E.5 fighters, contesting air superiority of the German Albatros [170610]; wounded by shot at the head causing lasting consequences [170706]; killed on 21 April 1918 in air action by action of pursuing Canadian Roy Brown and Australian ground machine gun crew. Buried with honor at Betangles, near Amiens by Australians. [180421];

Rickenbaker, Eddie. American 'Ace of Aces'; flying Nieuport type 28 in Aero Squadron 94 [170614];

Robeck, Adm John de. British. Decision for the Dardanelles fleet to renounce the attempt to cross the Dardanelles [150323]; Churchill's letter to Admiralty (Balfour) asking him to fire de R. [151006];

Robertson, Gen William 'Wully' R.

1915– CoS of BEF; meets Lloyd George at Allied conference; endless arguments between Westerner and Easterner begins [150207]; becomes CIGS, replacing Murray when FM French departs BEF [151223];

1916– Kitchener and R. involved in convincing Haig that relief must be provided for Verdun in form of diversionary attack [160328]; Support of Joffre's Somme plans in London [160609]; does not support Balfour (Admiralty), advancing considerate nuances on the «... to a knock Out» speech by LG, Balfour does not sway cabinet [161004]; confrontation with LG on Haig's strategy in Somme [161025]; Conference of Chantilly and Paris; the trip to Russia definitely cancelled [161117].

1917– PM creates War Policy Committee excluding military leaders; opposed to Haig's plans for deep penetration in Flanders; want action in Palestine and Italy [170619]; Conference on war strategy opposes military (Robertson, Haig, Jellicoe) to civilian War Policy Cabinet in head-on clash; Haig promises restraint in casualties; Robertson refuses to send guns to Italy; PM outraged he cannot stop [170620-1]; Cadorna's request to France and Great Britain for divisions and guns to finish off the Austrians-Hungarians in Italy; Robertson's refusal at Lloyd George's support [170715];

1918– The feud with PM escalates into a leak into newspapers about his intent to give control of British reserves to the Supreme War Council; PM has to defend in Parliament; point of no return; Robertson is heretofore on borrowed time [180212]; Robertson fired; goes to Home Command [180219]; Robertson

Rowlatt, Sir Sydney. British Justice of the Raj. His enquiry inspires the Rowlatt Act, in India, for measures against German and Bolchevic

subversion [180114];

Romania (aka Rumania). King Ferdinand's government waiting to join the victorious side; Romania opens secret talks with Russia after the successful Brusilov advances in June 1916, hoping to trade her support for desired provinces [160706]; (See **Battles of/Salonica**) British-Romanian negotiations to obtain that the Salonica army prevent the Bulgarians from being a threat to Romanians; the France-first reply from Lloyd George [160802]; Falkenhayn attempts to manage many theatres; Romania is slipping away [160809]; Sarrail cannot protect Romanians from Bulgars from Salonica [160810]; the battle of Florina; Bulgarians take Florina to occupy a dominating position on the Struma R. Serb Army in Salonica cannot do much to oppose; Mackensen poised to invade Romania on word [160817]; ROMANIA ENTERS THE WAR [160827]; the advance N. to Transylvania is hampered by bad communications through mountain range of Carpathian Alps, German-Austrian-Bulgarian defences there under arriving Falkenhayn; also Mackensen progressing in SE through Dobrudzha toward Danube; Romanian armies caught between hammer and anvil (see maps) [160913, 28]; Port of Constanza falls to Mackensen; Romania has no port; Salonica action is having no effect on Romania, being squeezed between Falkenhayn and Mackensen [161022]; the battle of Monastir, if successful, has no apparent effects on Romania; Romanians set fire to their oil wells and crops [161119-20]; the fall of Bucharest; terrible winter of 1916-1917 [170116]; the Treaty of Bucharest: Romania falls under Central Powers' control [180508];

Romanov, Tsar Nicholas II: Tsar of Russia; State visit by French President [140720]; mobilisation russe [140725]; Brinksmanship [140730]; Fall of Warsaw; 'cheap peace' offer [150805]; takes command of Russian forces in defeats of 1915 [150905]; (See **Rasputin**); Abdication of Nicholas II; refusal by Grand Duke Michael to take the Crown [170315]; **Family:** Rasputin; the Tsar's grave errors under his influence; Tsarina Alexandra's struggles against government [160220]; Rasputin killed by high officials intent on protecting the monarchy and empire [161230];

Ross Rifle. (See **Canada/Government, /Canadian Expeditionary Force**) PPCLI does not take. [141116]; British marksmanship with Lee Enfield [150117]; fully replaced [150610]; End of Ross rifle in Canadian hands [160621];

Rouen. France. Arrival of BEF [140816];

Royal Air Force (RAF). Canadians in [15024]; Smuts' report on Air forces; recommends amalgamation of RFC and RNAS, creation of a separate service, and a new Air Ministry [170824]; Gen Hugh Trenchard becomes Chief of Air Staff at the Air Ministry [171229]; Plans to use airships and aircraft to patrol for submarines; will prove very effective, including flying boats sinking seven U-Boats and convoys being escorted by airborne observers [180115]; Lord Rothermere and Gen Trenchard at Air Ministry prepare for unification of RFC and RNAS into RAF [180118]; Great difficulties between Rothermere and Gen Trenchard result in Trenchard giving resignation over false promises to airmen; Birth of the Royal Air Force (RAF); also, of the Women's Royal Air Force, amalgamating the former Women's Royal Naval Service and the Women's Army Auxiliary Corps [180401];

Royal Flying Corps (RFC). (See **Great Britain/Air Services** for ops) First Canadians [150204]; Disbanded and amalgamated into the Royal Air Force (RAF) [180401]; the Women's Army Auxiliary Corps (WAAC) was also amalgamated into the Women's Royal Air Force (WRAF)

Royal Naval Service (RNS). (See **Great Britain/Air Services** for ops) Canadians in [150204]; Disbanded and amalgamated into the Royal Air Force [180401]; the Women's Royal Naval Service (WRNS) was also amalgamated into the Women's Royal Air Force (WRAF)

Rupprecht, Prince R of Bavaria. Commandant de la Sixième armée allemande. [140819]; première bataille d'Artois [141001]; Arras [141005];

RUSSIA [RU].

Royalty: Tsar Nicholas II of Russia (See **Romanov**); State visit by French President [140720]; mobilisation russe [140725];

Brinksmanship [140730]; Nicholas II takes command of the Russian forces after the Central Powers' 'Triple Offensive' of 1915; his CoS Gen Alexeyev's attempt to rid armies of incompetent nobility [150905]; Rasputin; the Tsar's grave errors under his influence; Tsarina Alexandra's struggles against government [160220]; Rasputin killed by high officials intent on protecting the monarchy and empire [161230]; Tsar Nicholas II's abdication; Grand Duke refuses Crown [170315]; replaced by the Provisional Government of Prince Lvov. [170701]; the elimination of the Romanov family [180729];

Government.

1914– Russian Empire; mobilisation [140803]; Plan 19A; moving up to the Front; threatening Prussia [140812]; See Stalluponen. Declaration of War to Turkey [141105].

1915– Envers' campaign defeated [150111]; Bulgaria joins Triple Entente [150906,16-7].

1916– The influence of Rasputin on Tsar family and Nicholas II, new CinC; threatening Duma; fires Minister of War [160220];

1917– As governments respond to Wilson's request for their war aims, it becomes more evident that complete victory or defeat are the only possible outcome; no point of conciliation can be found [170110]; Conference of Petrograd: in wake of Rome conference, renewed Allied interest in helping Russia lead to high representatives coming to St. Petersburg to discuss logistics; however, government in great disturbance [170119]; Wilson's famous speech to the Nations at War remembered for «Peace Without Victory»; exhorting halt in hostilities and diplomatic negotiations on equal footing [170122]; massive protest by women for bread in streets of St. Petersburg [170223]; report from Milner in St Petersburg conference [170302]; provisional government of Prince Lvov oppressed by Marxist groups who have contributed to the February Revolution and held their All-Russian Congress of Soviets in June; Minister of War, Kerensky ordered Brusilov to initiate an immediate attack in Galicia; improvised and half-hearted attack on 1st July 1917 is followed by a devastating German counter attack run by brilliant Max Hoffmann; Russian army demoralized for good [170701]; Bolchevik manifestations in St. Petersburg undermine military cohesion and war policy in Provisional government; Entente ambassadors are now understanding that Russia may be ruined as an ally [170717]; the great Socialist conference of Stockholm; a seed of things to come in Europe [170811]; in St. Petersburg, Radical Socialists are now represented by the Executive Committee of the Soviets; after a great democratic conference, the Kerensky Provisional Government must from then on report to a Permanent Council where Mancheviks and Bolchevik Socialists can grasp a measure of power; they foment a Red Revolution [170927]; Lenin seizes the moment when Kerensky tries to bring balance to the socialist contenders; Trotsky commands the armed St Petersburg Soviet and Lenin proclaims Kerensky 'counter-revolutionary; October revolution takes two days [171023]; Trotsky's statement of Bolchevik policy against imperialism [171103]; Lenin's «Decree of Peace»; his decision to seek armistice; the army is disbanded and chaos is spreading; the Russians are out of the war! [171126]; first negotiations at Brest-Litovsk; Trotsky as head of Russian delegation; wants a treaty of peace «without annexations or reparations» as conceived by Wilson; Central Powers take advantage of the pause to reinforce the West [171203]; The case of Finland; separating from Russia after Bolchevik Revolution and pause of Brest-Litovsk [171205]; creation of a *Cheka*, the dangerous Bolchevik secret police [171207]; Lenin faced with not having won a majority for First Constituent Assembly; must work at derailing the process of Soviet representatives meeting in Petrograd [171209]; «They voted for peace with their feet» – The 15 Dec 1917 Armistice between Russia and the Quadruple Alliance (Germany, Austria-Hungary, Turkey and Bulgaria); a three-month truce to negotiate a treaty of peace [171215]; Allies' consideration of

consequences of Russian armistice (see **Supreme Council**) [171225].

1918– Finland demands and gets Independence from Russia [180104]; Trotsky has asked for a pause in negotiations at Brest-Litovsk; meanwhile Lenin makes a coup d'État at the Russian Constituent Assembly, inaugurating the dictatorship of the proletariat; Trotsky can return to the table with the backing of a government and the building of a Red Army [180105]; Second Constituent Assembly of Russia [180119]; In Brest Litovsk, Ukraine agrees to become 'exclusive protectorate' for Germany in exchange for sham 'independence and sovereignty'; Germany is carving Russia into a rump, one province at a time [180209]; Germans banging the table at Brest Litovsk: Central Powers go back on the offensive and invade parts of Russia, almost without opposition; Baltic countries are carved out of the Russian sphere [180218]; Trotsky's negotiations in Brest Litovsk crushed by German power and lack of Socialist support in Europe; dissensions within the Russian delegation [1802]; Estonia declares independence with German support [180224]; Central Powers' strong arm tactics in the Ukraine [180302]; Trotsky compelled to sign the Treaty of Brest Litovsk; enormous spoils to the winner; unprecedented humiliations; reduction of Russia to a Rump [180303-4]; *la Résolution de Lénine «Guerre et Paix» fait du parti bolchévique le Parti Communiste* [180307]; facing the problem of leadership in the Red Army, now poised to face the Central Powers again [180408]; Allied supreme Council decisions on Russia: protection of Allied materiel in Murmansk and Archangel; Japanese progress in Vladivostok and Siberia [180503]; the Treaty of Bucharest: Romania falls under Central Powers' control [180508]; Allied Czech contingent of 30,000 in Russia; opposed to Bolsheviks after Revolution; become enemy of Communists within Russia; their escape to the Far East [180514,31]; Japanese intervention in Vladivostok; occupation of Siberia [180517]; British War Office sending of Gen Poole to Murmansk to protect allied stockpiles against Reds or Germans; progressive delienation of Reds and Whites Russians [180525]; The Basic Socialist Law of the Russian Socialist Federative Republic; a constitution for the Council of People's Commissars [180710]; Lenin shot and wounded by Fanny Kaplan; executed [180820]; Discussions in Berlin, in light of withdrawals in France, of the prospects of keeping territories gained in the Brest Litovsk Peace Accord with Russia; counting on Europe's need to have a buffer zone of controlled countries, including Poland, to contain a Russian rump of International Communism [180905];

Russian Army:

1914– At the Carpathian passes; Advance to Cracow, Carpathian passes winter 1914-1915. Austro-Hungarian retreat in Carpathians, 50,000 prisoners; Russians threatening Budapest from Cracow, German Silesia [141129] before winter 1914; exhaustion; battle of Limanova-Lapanov [141211];

1915– Battles of Mansuria Lakes [150213]; launching of further ops in Carpathians [150222]; Retreat of summer 1915 [150703]; Lublin and Cholm fall to German hands [150801]; Fall of Warsaw [150805]; large German advances over Dvinsk, Kovno, Vilna, Grodno, Brest Litovsk and Tarnopov [150826]; The great retreats of the Russian armies and refugees of Aug and Sep 1915; casualties [1509];

1916 – The futile battle of Narotch [160318]; changes in High Command following Narotch; Ivanov becomes adviser to Tsar [160329]; Start of the Brusilov offensives of 1916, in Galicia; remarkable success of new techniques and tactics; forces Germans and Austro-Hungarians to move reinforcements away from France and Italy theatres [160604]; stunning victories against Austro-Hungarians [160613]; full extend of Brusilov success against Austro-Hungarian in South Army Group [160625]; Brusilov's Southern Group of Russian armies out of steam; not followed on flank by Northern Group of Russian armies (Gen Evert) [160628]; Brusilov's offensives started on June 4, are nowstopped by the Tsar;

1917– the misery of the cold winter of 1916-1917 [170323]; Minister of War, Kerensky orders Brusilov to initiate an immediate attack in Galicia; improvised and half-hearted attack on 1st July 1917 is followed by a devastating German counter attack run by brilliant Max Hoffmann; Russian army demoralized for good [170701];

1918– Spanish Flu; starts in the summer of 1918 with a first wave of severe symptoms that necessitate hospitalization; soldiers are hard-hit; the second wave of 1919 will kill some fifty million people across the world [180801];

Armies:

First Russian Army (Vilna Army) [140824]; : Under Gen Rennenkampf at Stallupönen [140817];

Second Russian Army (Warsaw army) [140824]; : Under Gen Samsonov at Stallupönen [140817]; Gunbinnen [140823].

(End of RUSSIA)

S

Saint-Quentin. First Somme. [140927];

Salisbury Plains. Visit of Canadian contingent by King, Queen and Kitchener in Salisbury Plains [141104]; disease; 4,000 sick [150122]; 'sham shoes' [150127];

Salonika. Greece. See **Battles of/Salonica.** Theatre of Allied operations. Sideshow. Churchill and Lloyd George disagree on importance. [150129]; See **Sarrail.**

Sambre River. [140818]; Fr. Premiers signes de déséquilibre dans les armées françaises du nord [140820]; Opportunity missed by northern armies [140821];

Sanders, Gen Otto Liman Von. German commander in Gallipoli; prepares defence after Allied forts bombardment and naval raids have failed [150326]; action in Sluvla Bay landing [150809];

Sarajevo [140628]

Sarrail, Gen Maurice. France. Commander *Troisième Armée*; Salonica Front. Reputation; Joffre refusing to support [150911]; Sarrail's attempt to reach and hold Monastir so as to establish communications with Adriatic coast and keep Bulgarian busy in Serbia; away from Romanians; lack of transport in mountainous ground [160911]; Taking of Monastir; Rupture of the Venizelists becomes an acute division in Greece society after the return of the Serbs to Monastir; Sarrail behind the Serbian return to Serbia [161209]; Sarrail at the Rome Conference: told not to over-publicize the Greek participaion to the Salonica Force; American Greek public not happy with schism created by Venizelos' hurry to get into the war [170107]; Guillaumat replace Sarrail à Salonica [171223];

Sassoon, Siegfried. British Poet. On regimental badges [170225];

Save River. Serbia, Battle on [140813];

Scapa Flow. British Naval Base, Orckney Islands. Protection [141008];

Scotland. The final act at Beaumont Hamel; Third battle of the Ancre; 51 Highland Division takes the remaining German strongpoints along the Ancre R.[161113];

Sellendorf, Gen Bronsart Von. CoS of Turkish Third Army in Russian campaign [141206];

Schlewig-Denmark, Isthmus [140629]

Schlieffen. German General author of Schlieffen Plan; Unfolding of Plan [140803]; Description of deployment with map [140805]; Fr. Plan abandonné [140827]; German failure [140909];

Seely, J.E.B. 'Jack'. Former Secretary of State for War in British Cabinet, appointed by Kitchener as commander of Horse in Canadian contingent [150201];

Sedan. [140818];

Serbia:

1914– Receives Ultimatum [140723]; reponse to ultimatum [140725]; second successful counter-attack against Austro-Hungarian armies in N; Gen Putkik's control of low munitions [141202]; rataking of Belgrade by Serbs; losses on both sides [141215];

1915– effects of Bulgaria's Treaty with Triple Alliance [150906,16-7]; Isolation from Salonica due to Bulgarian advance on Vardar R.

Greek attitude [151004]; Austro-Hungarian re-newed assault of Serbia; importance of Orient Railway; Salonica neutralized by Bulgaria [151007,11]; Kumanovo and Üsküb, SE Serbia taken; Serbs pushed into a pocket; refugees begging to enter Montenegro; Allies in Salonica can do little to prevent; Mackensen with Bulgars proving unstoppable [151022]; Mackensen's success against Serbia [151120];

1916– Heroic evacuation of military and civilians through Montenegro, then ferry from San Giovanni di Medua to Brindisi, Italy [160114]; Serbian army reconstituted at Salonica, ready to go [160712]; Taking of Monastir; Rupture of the Venizelists becomes an acute division in Greece society after the return of the Serbs to Monastir; Sarraïl behind the Serbian return to Serbia [161209]; (See **Battles of/Salonica, /Last Hundred Days**) [180914];

Sharpe, Lt William. First Canadian pilot killed in RFC [150204];

Sheer, Adm Reinhard. Appointed CinC of High Seas Fleet of German Navy; intent to use in conjunction with submarine force [160118];

Shrapnell. Munition type. Inadequate; illustration [141012]; 75mm [141021];

Siberia. Balfour's Allied Diplomatic Conference of London resolves that allies must ask Japan and US to act against Central Powers' invasion of Russia through the East: Siberia [180316];

Sims, Adm. United States. USN Representative in London; involved in the deployment of the 'Yankee Boats,' rushed immediately after the American declaration of war to support France in coastal protection [170605];

Sinton, Dr. J.A. Sinton VC. Canadian Medical Officer in Indian Medical Service in Mesopotamia; involved in field operations while wounded [160121];

Skoda. German industrial producers of cannon; in Liège [140807];

Smith-Dorrien, Gen. Horace. Commander II British Corps. From Mons to Le Cateau; Portrait [140829]; Canadians on the line [150303];

Smoke. Used on battlefields to screen movement; reporting of first use of artillery smoke shells by Canadian H.W. McBride, author of famous books.[151012];

Smuts, Gen Jan. South Africa. Rebellion [141124]; successful campaigns of 1916 against all German protectorates of Africa [170429]; Smuts relinquishes command-in-chief in South Africa in Jan 1917; participation as South African delegate to the Imperial Conference of April 1917; associated with PM Borden of Canada in drafting Dominions resolutions [170429]; (See Great **Britain/ Government**) asked to submit a report of recommendations on strategies in France; Smuts supports Haig's approach in the circumstances; also find Middle east 'sideshow' of great interest although he refuses offered command there [170502]; in Lloyd George's War Policy Committee [170619]; Smuts' report on Air forces; recommends amalgamation of RFC and RNAS, creation of a separate service, and a new Air Ministry [170824]; Smuts sent to Geneva to meet Count von Mendorff-Pouilly-Dietrichstein to discuss Austrian overtures for peace; the result is a confirmation that AH is bound to Germany to the end [171219];

Soissons. France. German retreat to sne R. [140913];

Souchon, Admiral. German Commander in Mediterranean chase of *Goeben* and *Breslau* [140810];;

South Africa, Union of. Rebellion; Smuts and Botha regain control [141124];

Spanish Flu. Starts in the summer of 1918 with a first wave of severe symptoms that necessitate hospitalization; soldiers are hard-hit; the second wave of 1919 will kill some fifty million people across the world [180801];

Spee, V-Adm. Maximilian Von. Cmdr German East Asia Squadron; Papete [140921]; in South America [141006]; killed in battle of Falklands.

Spithead: Review [140718];

Steele, Mgen Sam. Famous Mounted Police officer charged of training second contingent at Shorncliffe, England [150614];

Stopford, Lgen Sir Frederick 'Stop for Tea.' IX Corps commander at Sluvla Bay landing, jeopardized own op by stopping to rest [150806-7];

Storm Troopers (Strosstruppen). Shock troops used on the offensive by German army. See Lafargue [150804]; Start of Op MICHAEL against Byng's Third Army and Gough's Fifth Army; 'A Storm of Troopers'

[180321];

St.Petersburg. [140712]

Submarine warfare. See Germany/Submarine Service; Great Britain/Submarines. U-9 [140922]; Interruption of German Unrestricted Submarine Warfare after sinking of *SS Arabic*. pause 20 Sep 1915 to January 1916 [150920]; differences between Falkenhayn and Bethmann on USW [151211];severe division of views in German High Command on USW; Kaiser decides that Chancellor has three months to sort out diplomatic solution; Tirpitz resigns on postponement [160306];

Suez Canal. Martial Law in Egypt [141114]; Ottoman-German operation against [150203];

Supreme War Council, Allied, Versailles. (Conseil Supérieur de Guerre des Alliés)

1917– Discussions on the implications of the armistice signed by Russia and the Quadruple alliance at Brest-Litovs; considerations on the logistic advantages to Central Powers if Russians allow exploitation of resources; decision on supporting all countries and nations opposed to the Bolchevik support of enemies [171225]; emergence of Red and White Russia conflict [171225];

1918– Note 12 of SWC recommends centralization of reserves to the C-in-Cs of the French theatre; Haig and Pétain do not respond well [180122]; *mise au point sérieuse entre Pétain et Foch sur la notion de réserves communes entre les armées nationales en France; Pétain s'y oppose et empêche même Foch de travailler sur de tels plans* [180125]; Pétain and Haig both opposed to central coordination of the SWC [180128]; General Bliss becomes representative of United States at SWC; involved in negotiating transport, training, incorporation into France Front of up to twenty-four 27,000 men divisions [180131]; Haig's refusal to Rawlinson and Wilson [180306]; the Summit of Abbeville: Foch given additional responsibilities as overall commander of whole Western Front, including Italy; Versailles planning staff transferred to his HQ; Pershing agrees to transport of troops over materiel [180502]; decisions on Russia: protection of Allied materiel in Murmansk and Archangel; Japanese progress in Vladivostok and Siberia [180503]; Haig-Foch argument over Haig's control of British divisions in Strategic Reserve; Foch is adamant; he cannot have them! [180607]; meeting of 2-4 July [180702]; Foch reacts to Pres Wilson's indications that he would like to be mediator for an armistice; in the military committee of the Supreme War Council he makes it clear that the military authorities of the allies will have to be involved in ensuring that the Central Powers, if they want an armistice, will have to relinquish the arms that make them capable of renewing war; this includes land, sea and air material of war [181008]; council

Sykes, Colonel T.B. Mark. Co-author of the famous Sykes-Picot agreement on post-war Middle East. [160104,0202]; as undersecretary of War Cabinet, meets Dr. Chaim Weizmann, leading chemist and Jewish leader for negotiations on Jewish help in the war [170129];

T

Tactics. Night fighting in the trenches [150702]; introduction of concentration of machine-guns in mg companies for each Canadian brigade [160330]; the «laboratory battle» of Riga, where Bruchmüller developed immediate 'saturation' that became an integral part of Shock Troops tactics [170901]; The Battle of Cambrai; a first massive use of tanks (476); an incomplete victory [171120]; on the adoption by British army of tactical principles already well used by the Germans, and the conclusions that the recently acquired Passchendaele must be abandoned because of vulnerabilities [171214]; reorganization of British divisions in France; from 12 to 9 battalions per division [171227,180110,0227]; Currie's views on larger divisions, larger Corps troops, with reserves of infantry, specialist teams at lower levels, and all-arms mobile tactics for offensive action [180207];

Tank. Churchill's ideas on 'mechanical device for taking trenches'; meeting with Maj Hetherington; creation of Admiralty Landship Committee (E.H. Tennyson-d'Eyncourt); the Concrete Land Ship [150221]; Landship project continued with Joint Naval and Military

Committee (Gen Scott-Moncrieff) [150615].

1916– A «Mark I» prototype is displayed at Hatfield Park, Hertfordshire, England, for select crowd; «Mother» is the first viable prototype of an armoured fighting vehicle [160129]; transfer of development from Admiralty's Landship Committee to Ministry of Munitions Tank Supply Committee; challenge is now to produce 100 Mark Is ordered by Haig; Heavy Section of Machine-Gun Corps will receive 'tanks' for BEF [160217]; secret training of two companies tanks at Yvrench, near Abbeville, in France [160904]; entry into the battlefield of FlersCourselette of the first Tank Mark I in action; blunder in the method of their employment [160920]; Churchill, although out of office, presents a paper to Minister of Munitions on «Mechanical Power on the Offensive», outlining the overall strategy of using many types of armoured mechanical vehicles on the battlefield; prescient and brilliant [161109].

1917– The Battle of Cambrai; a first massive use of tanks (476); an incomplete victory [171120]; Haig on the limitations of tanks in battle and curtaining growth of Tank Corps [171204].

1918– Churchill's interest in German tanks [180319]; German tanks in Villers-Bretonneux [180424]; more Allied tanks make a difference in the field; production of 400 British Mark Vs and 2,700 French FTs, by war-end [180630]; tk

Taylor, A.J.P., Historian [140710] on Beaverbrook's method of reporting from Ypres, 1915, quoted [150501]

Thiepval. First Somme [140927];

Thionville. France. Avance de la Cinquième Armée vers [140819];

Tirpitz, Adm. Alfred Von. Secretary of State for Navy. Marginalized by the Kaiser [140816]; views [141115]; strategic views on Belgium [150108]; speaks to American press [151222]; under the influence of T. «Intensified submarine warfare against armed merchant shipping is resumed.; prelude to full USW [160229]; severe division of views in German High Command on USW; Kaiser decides that Chancellor has three months to sort out diplomatic solution; Tirpitz resigns on postponement [160306]; replaced by Adm von Capelle [160313];

Tisza, Count István. First minister of Hungarian government, assassinated [140703]; [140707]; écrit à l'Empereur [140708]; Decision to agree [140716];

Townshend, Mgen Charles V.F. Commander 6 Div. Brit 6 Div sent to Mesopotamia to join Indian Army; creates Mesopotamia Expeditionary Force (MEF) [150212]; capture of Amara [150603]; press on to Baghdad [150928]; ;

Tremblay, Lcol Thomas-Louis. Becomes CO of 22e Bataillon ('Vandoos'), only French-speaking battalion in CEF [160124]; on the Nivelle visit to Vimy [170216]; on Beaverbrook's newspaper criticism of French Canadian anti-conscriptionism and the 'Vandoos' reputation [171127]; promoted Brigadier [180810];

Trenchard, Gen Hugh 'Boom'. Great Britain. Army Commander of RFC. His advice that Belgium coast should be retaken after London bombing of Jun 1917 [170613]; becomes Chief of Air Staff at the new Air Ministry; tasked to unite RFC and RNAS in single service [171229];

Tschirschky und Bögendorf, Heinrich Leonhard von, German Ambassador in Vienna [140704];

Trevelyan, George Maculey. Historian. Letter to Lloyd George on Serbia, 'key to Middle East, and Balkans prospects [150113];

Trotsky, Lev Davidovitch Bronstein. Long-time revolutionary socialist writer; was sent to prison by Kerensky Provisional Government as Bolshevik involved in a coup, until released 14 Sep 1917; in close association with Lenin and Stalin; will create Red Army for a Socialist revolution [170914]; Lenin seizes the moment when Kerensky tries to bring balance to the socialist contenders; Trotsky commands the armed St Petersburg Soviet and Lenin proclaims Kerensky 'counter-revolutionary; October revolution takes two days [171023]; statement of Bolshevik policy against imperialism [171103]; Lenin's «Decree of Peace»; his decision to seek armistice; the army is disbanded and chaos is spreading; the Russians are out of the war! [171126]; Brest Litovsk, Ukraine agrees to become 'exclusive protectorate' for Germany in exchange for sham 'independence and sovereignty'; Germany is carving Russia into a rump, one province at

a time [180209]; Germans banging the table at Brest Litovsk: Central Powers go back on the offensive and invade parts of Russia, almost without opposition; Baltic countries are carved out of the Russian sphere [180218]; Trotsky's negotiations in Brest Litovsk crushed by German power and lack of Socialist support in Europe; dissensions within the Russian delegation [1802]; facing the problem of leadership in the Red Army, now poised to face the Central Powers again [180408];

TURKEY:

Royalty: Sultan Abdul Ahmid II in 1898 [140722]; Sultan Mahmet V proclaims *Jihad* as Grand Caliph [141114]; Sultan Husayn Kamil and bombardment of Dardanelles forts [150304];

Government:

1914– Committee of Union and Progress ('Young Turks'), German Protection [140722]; Enver Pasha [140722]; Building *Sultan Oman* and *Reshadieh* in Britain [140810]; Mesopotamia oil [140927]; *Breslau* and *Goeben* cross Bosphorus into Black Sea, threatening Sebastopol and Odessa [141027]; Allies declare war to T. [141105]; Enver's campaign to Russia [141206]; British sub enters Dardanelles, sinks *Messudieh* [141213];

1915– Enver's campaign to Russia a failure [150111]; Ottoman-German operation against Suez Canal [150203]; RM landing in Dardanelles proves insufficient; legend of Little Mehmet [150227]; Venezelos offers troops when Dardanelles forts are bombarded; imbroglio with Russia [150304]; Armenians [150317]; entrance of RN raid blocked [150319]; *Avertissements des Alliés contre les crimes commis* [150524]; Brit 6 Div sent to Mesopotamia (Gen Townshend) to join Indian Army [150212]; Kemal in Gallipoli [150722]; draconian regime of Djemal in Syria [150802]; Bulgaria joins Triple Entente [150906,16];

1916– Allies' evacuation of Dardanelles, [See **Battles of Dardanelles** and **Gallipoli**]; Turkish casualties in Gallipoli [160108];

1917– As governments respond to Wilson's request for their war aims, it becomes more evident that complete victory or defeat are the only possible outcome; no point of conciliation can be found [170110]; Jaffa taken [171116]; «They voted for peace with their feet» – The 15 Dec 1917 Armistice between Russia and the Quadruple Alliance (Germany, Austria-Hungary, Turkey and Bulgaria); a three-month truce to negotiate a treaty of peace [171215];

1918– Wilson's «Fourteen Points» Speech: the death sentence of two empires [180108]; former *Goeben* and *Breslau*, now Ottoman *Midilli* and *Yavuz* exit Dardanelles ad attack British warships near Imbros and Mudoss [180120]; Treaty of Bakum; with Armenia, Georgia and Azerbaijan; ends hostilities on Caucasian Front; territorial clauses with Armenia and Georgia [180605]; See **Battles of Mesopotamia**, and **Middle East**. Enver Pasha involved in the over-extension of Ottoman campaign in Caucasus, at Kars, Arbahan, and Batum, then Baku in Azerbaijan; troops involved there are sorely missing in Mesopotamia and Palestine [180617]; end of the Young Turks's regime in Constantinople [181007]; new government in Turkey **Ahmet Izzet Pasha** forms a government; send prisoner Gen Townshend to convey to British authorities Turkey's intention to end the war [181013];

Turner, Bgen Richard E.W., VC. GOC 3 Bde in Saint-Nazaire [150216]; on the line [150303]; (See **Canada/Government, /CEF**). The Turner-Currie-Hugues choice for division command [150624]; at Second Division [150817]; sent to London [161130]; acquisition of Argyll House, on Regent Street, in London, as Headquarters for Canadian Forces Overseas; Gen Turner is GOC Overseas Canadian Forces with full staff; the place soon becomes known as Ivory Tower [170124]; well-connected [170623]; creation of the Overseas Militia Council in London; Albert Kemp oversees; LGen Turner is C. of S. [180504];

U

Ukraine. In Brest Litovsk, Ukraine agrees to become 'exclusive protectorate' for Germany, in exchange for sham 'independence and sovereignty'; Germany is carving Russia into a rump, one province at a time [180209]; Germans banging the table at Brest Litovsk: Central Powers go back on the offensive and invade parts of Russia, almost without opposition; Baltic countries are carved out of the Russian sphere [180218]; Central Powers' strong arm tactics in the Ukraine [180302]; Germans stage a coup d'État, planting a puppet Head of State [180428];

UNITED STATES [US]

President: (See also **Wilson, Woodrow**) Pres. Wilson elected in 1912, reelected in November 1916 elected and re-elected on a banner of «Progressivism» and «Americanism» against a divided Republican Party. Committed to not join into the War [161107]; Wilson's offer to mediate in Dec 1916: asks all parties to state their war aims; Colonel House involved [161220]; UNITED STATES DECLARATION OF WAR TO GERMANY [170406]; letter from Lloyd George asking for an Allied Supreme Council of Heads of State; he would like to direct military strategy from there [170903]; the Global Enquiry: Wilson's attempt to fix the world [170905]; signs a formal approval for major project of placing a mine net between Orkney Islands and Norway to prevent German High Seas Fleet from exiting the North Sea [171029]; success of mine barriers in early 1918 in curbing U-Boat effectiveness and survivability [180102]; Wilson's «Fourteen Points» Speech: the death sentence of two empires [180108]; German response to recent speeches by PM and Pres. Wilson; self-confidence is high in Central Powers due to prospects being opened in Brest Litovsk negotiations with Russian resources in the balance [180124]; Wilson's congratulations to Russian Government [180312]; Wilson uses sparingly immense powers given by new Congress War policy laws [180521]; after his «Fourteen Points» of 8 Jan 1918, his «Four Principles» of 11 Feb, his speech on «Four Ends» of 4 Jul rings a bell around the world; the timing is good; German diplomats understand that there is something there for them [180704]; (See **Battles of Last Hundred Days; Great Britain Government; Supreme War Council**). On October 4, 1918, Germany and Austria send diplomatic notes to Pres. Wilson to ask to arbitrate negotiations for armistice on lines of 14-Point principles; German government tries to impress with improvised democratic measures to be seen as change from policy; Great Britain and France immediately oppose private arrangements between Germany and USA [181004]; Foch reacts to Pres Wilson's indications that he would like to be mediator for an armistice; in the military committee of the Supreme War Council he makes it clear that the military authorities of the allies will have to be involved in ensuring that the Central Powers, if they want an armistice, will have to relinquish the arms that make them capable of renewing war; this includes land, sea and air material of war [181008]; Wilson's change of heart; now makes clear that armistice will impose disarmament and peace negotiations will be separate process [181016];

Government:

1915– Protest against Unrestricted Submarine Warfare announced by Germany [150206]; Strict Accountability Note by Secretary of State W.J. Bryan opposes German determination to launch USW on 28 Feb [150210]; Pres Wilson's envoy House does not succeed in changing Allied and German stance on blockades; [150301]; C.H. Hoover's food relief to Belgium [150302]; resignation of Sec. of State W.J. Bryan against Wilson's reaction to *Lusitania* [150609]; German Reply to Wilson's Second Note [150710]; sinking of *Arabic* forces pause in USW [150920];

1916– The Dumba Affair [150929]; the Von Papen affair [160115]; the Gore-McLemore Resolution on Trans-Atlantic travel [160209]; under the influence of Tirpitz, «Intensified submarine warfare against armed merchant shipping is resumed.»; prelude to full USW [160229]; severe division of views in German High Command on USW; Kaiser decides that Chancellor has three months to sort out diplomatic solution with US; Tirpitz resigns on postponement [160306]; Kaiser spends 800,000 Marks to convince Mexican Pancho

Villa to attack Columbus, New Mexico; Wilson sends Pershing with 10,000 men [160310]; damaging of *Sussex* by UB-29 in Channel with loss of American lives enrages public opinion; stiff diplomatic exchanges follow with Germany, threat of cutting diplomatic relations [160324]; Germany attempting diplomatic relations with Japan, emphasizing conflict with US [160520]; the question of the British «Black List» of American shipping companies prevented from entering blockade of Germany; United States' outrage [160725]; Wilson's offer to mediate in Dec 1916: asks all parties to state their war aims; Colonel House involved [161220];

1917– German amb. to Washington hands in letter announcing resumption of Unrestricted Submarine Warfare on February 1st, 1917. [170131]; Having received no reply from Germany with their war aims, and hearing that the USW is on, Wilson goes to the Capitol to issue a warning that he will protect American ships with all means necessary [170203]; preparing for a draft: the Crowder Bill [170204]; the Zimmermann telegram of 9 Jan 1917, to German ambassador of Mexico; offer of compensation for invading US; intercepted; text; one of Britain's greatest Intelligence coup [170301;0406]; Zimmermann telegram released to the press; U-Boat sinking of SS *Algonquin*; Lansing announces that American merchant ships will be protected by armed guards [170312]; Pres Wilson goes to Congress to warn that unchanged German attitude warrants war [170402]; **UNITED STATES DECLARATION OF WAR TO GERMANY** congress votes overwhelmingly in favor [170406]; Balfour heads British delegation to United States to discuss association in war; accompanied by multiple experts [170422]; The Joffre-Baker Accord on military cooperation; the army selective draft system for up to 1 million men [170514]; Pershing's arrival in France [170615]; arrival of first US soldiers in France; «*Sammies*» in Saint-Nazaire [170626]; in early July 1917, Wilson decrees an embargo on all 'neutral' exports going out of US for countries neighboring Germany; wants each to justify needs for food [170709]; the price of gold and international lending [170822]; British minister of Munitions Churchill behind the creation of Allied Maritime Transport Council (AMTC) to coordinate shipping among Allied nations; crucial step in prioritizing munitions transport; key step in creation of more Allied agencies for central coordination of assets [171104]; The Rapallo Conference, Italy; agreement for the creation of Supreme War Council in Versailles with high civilian government representatives; Lloyd George's influence in the Rapallo Convention [171105]; British War Cabinet allocating top priority for shipping to bringing American troops [171109]; Pershing's claims for more troops and more transport [171220]; Japanese navy to Vladivostok; US-Japan relations [171226]; James Reese Europe; black military musicians in France [171228];

1918– British offer to US for shipping of raw troops, not formations, without equipment, in a short surge of transport [180116]; General Bliss becomes representative of United States at SWC; involved in negotiating transport, training, incorporation into France Front of up to twenty-four 27,000-men divisions by June 1918 [180131]; Balfour's Allied Diplomatic Conference of London resolves that allies must ask Japan and US to act against Central Powers' invasion of Russia through the East: Siberia [180316]; Foch named in authority to conduct overall control of operations in France in the name of Supreme War Council; national Commanders-in-Chief Pétain, Haig and Pershing, to follow his plans [180403]; new war laws passed by Congress: *The Sedition act, The Espionage Act, and The Overton Act* also, the *Overman Act*; all contribute to Government control of all assets important to war policy [180521]; coastal threat by U-151; its sinking of SS *Carolina* among six on single Black Sunday [180524,0602]; U-151 replaced by U-156 after having made 23 sinkings, for 61,000 tons; diminishing returns of U-140, U-117, U-155, U-152, and U-139 [180616]; war finances: loans to France [180816];

Armed Services:

US Army (See also **US/Government**).

1917– US Army Air Force (USAAF) the Nieuport type 28; improved; used by US pilots [170614]; Rickenbaker, flying Nieuport type 28 in Aero Squadron 94 [170614]; Pershing GHG in Chaumont, Haute-Marne [170902]; American expeditionary Force (AEF) only stands at

60,000 in France in early October 1917; well below Pershing's plans; shipping is key to arrivals [171003]; first divisions are already on the line in Meuse-Argonne; Pershing forms Second Army (Gen Bullard) [171014]; 1 US Div enters the Line; 27,000 men! [171021];

1918– See **Battles of/Kaiserschlacht**, 21 Mar to 4 Aug 1918). Priority in shipping allows growth of AEF to 650,000 by the end of May (18 large divisions) [180513]; On 20 May 1918, Foch senses that the Germans are overextended and vulnerable; he orders advances in all armies of the Allied Front in France, with priorities around Amiens and Béthune [180520]; his description of American soldiers suddenly flooding the roads, counter-attacking Op BLÜCHER [180529]; the American battles of Lucy-le-Bocage and Belleau Wood; terrible casualties due to inexperience; superb determination by US Marines despite 5,700 casualties [180606]; by end-June, there are 996,000 men in France; four enormous divisions combat-ready [180626]; the astonishing successes of the 33rd US National Guard Division in Vaux Wood and of Australian General John Monash in Hamel, showing skills in interarm cooperation and use of surprise with great effect [180705]. See **Battles of/Last Hundred Days** or operations between 4 Aug and 11 Nov 1918, [**Day 61**]:The Americans at St.Mihiel: Pershing commands three corps composed of six US and five French divisions, a quarter million men, with abundant artillery, tanks, and air support; he will take the salient in three days, with 14,500 prisoners and 443 guns; he will then be shifted by Foch to the Argonne region where he will fit into the larger Front as the southerlymost army [180912];

US Navy (See **US/Government** for details).

V

Valcartier. Canada. Preparation of first Canadian contingent [140908];

Valieve.Serbia. [140813];

Vatican. Pope Benedict XV sent his Nuncio, Archbishop Eugenio Pacelli, to Germany to carry a message of Peace and offer the Catholic Church's mediation[170801]; curt message of reply to the Pope [170910];

Venezelos, Eleftherios. Greece. PM. Opposition pro-Allies and pro-Germans; King and Queen pro-German; Salonica [150209]; Venezelos offers troops when Dardanelles forts are bombarded; imbroglio with Russia [150304]; fall of V.'s government [150306]; the consequences of Bulgaria's treaty with Triple Alliance; reinforcement of Salonica in Fall of 1915 [150924];Venezelos declares a pro-Allies Provisional Government of Greece, despite being banned by the King; forms a Greek contingent with Salonica Force [161017]; declares war to Germany and Bulgaria [161123];

Verdun. France. Citadelle. Fr. Premiers signes de déséquilibre dans les armées françaises du nord [140820]; Tir de canon de Duzey, marque le début de l'accumulation d'artillerie allemande pour l'opération du printemps [151001]; Voir **Battles of/Verdun**.

Villers-Cotterêts. Fr. combats de repli du CEB.

Vimy Ridge. France. Prs [141005]; attaques répétées par les Français dans la campagne de Artois-Champagne, printemps et automne 1915 [151013];

Vistula River. Prussia, Poland. Bay of Vistula on Baltic Sea [140817];

Viviani, René: French Président du Conseil [140720] Union Sacrée [140828]; defeated on the responsibilities for the summer-fall 1915 operations (Artois-Champagne); replaced by Briand. [151026];

Vosges. [140927];

W

Wangenhaim, Hans. German Ambassador to Constantinople [140722];

War Book: British [140715]; DORA [140808];

Warsaw. Poland. Battle [141019];

Weddingen, Kåpitanleutnant Otto. U-9 [140922];

Weizmann, Dr. Chaim. Leading chemist, discoverer of method of producing acetone, and leader in Jewish community. His meeting with

Mark Sykes, undersecretary of War Cabinet, in Jan 1916 [170129]; the Balfour Declaration [171002]; Meeting of Faisal and Weizmann; discussion of possibility of Jewish land after Arab victory in Hejaz [180604];

Wemyss, R-Adm. British. Convoy protection for first canadian contingent [141003];

Weygand, Gen Maxime. France. Brilliant Staff Officer who follows Foch from assignment to assignment; make a team. With Foch at Supreme Council; see consideration of consequence of Russian armistice (see **Supreme Council**) [171225];

Wilhelm II, Kaiser.See Hohenzollern.

Wilson, Gen Henry. British. BEF liaison Officer with French GHQ. networks of tension in high command [150727]; Kitchener-Joffre meeting re Gen French [150816]; his difficulties with Pétain; return to London [170628]; Robertson fired; goes to Home Command; replaced by Henry Wilson from SWC [180219]; Rawlinson to Supreme War Council, replacing Wilson; Birdwood temporarily replaces at Fourth Army [180223]; very wrong predictions that the war will last into 1919 [180825];

Wilson, Woodrow. President of the United states. (See also **United States/Preident**, and **/Government**)

1914– *Offre de médiation* [141110].

1915– Is intent to never go to war exemplified by Washington newspaper story [151028];

1916– Germans looking for a 'Third Way' between Yes and No with USW; Wilson adamant that they cannot exercise against American vessels [160506]; speech on mediation; rejected in both Great Britain ad Germany [160527]; Wilson speaking with German Ambassador to US, suggests again a US-brokered peace deal negotiation; clear refutation by Lloyd George in «...to a knock out!» speech [160929]; Re-elected in Nov 1916 [161107]; Bethmann Hollweg's Peace Offer: an attempt to divide Allies of the Entente [161212]; Wilson's offer to mediate in Dec 1916: asks all parties to state their war aims; Colonel House involved [161220].

1917– Little results from the offer of mediation; US Amb. to Berlin James W. Gerard makes a statement meant to convey American impartiality to the German government [170106]; as governments respond to Wilson's request for their war aims, it becomes more evident that complete victory or defeat are the only possible outcome; no point of conciliation can be found [170110]; Wilson's famous speech to the Nations at War remembered for «Peace Without Victory»; exhorting halt in hostilities and diplomatic negotiations on equal footing [170122]; Having received no reply from Germany with their war aims, and hearing that the USW is on, Wilson goes to the Capitol to issue a warning that he will protect American ships with all means necessary [170203]; immediately preparing for a draft: the Crowder Bill [170204]; goes to Congress to warn that unchanged German attitude warrants war [170402]; in early July 1917, Wilson decrees an embargo on all 'neutral' exports going out of US for countries neighboring Germany; wants each to justify needs for food [170709];

1918– Wilson's «Fourteen Points» Speech: the death sentence of two empires; Wilson called for the abolition of secret treaties, arms reductions, colonial adjustments, freedom of the seas, removal of economic barriers, self-determination for oppressed minorities, and a world organization to oversee these measures [180108]; From Fourteen Points to Four Principles [180225]; Wilson's congratulations to Russian Government; saw rise of democracy and importance of keeping as ally [180312]; new war laws passed by Congress: *The Sedition Act*, *The Espionage Act*, and *The Overton Act*; also, *The Overman Act*; all contribute to Government control of all assets important to war policy; Wilson seen as using immense powers sparingly [180521]; after his «Fourteen Points» of 8 Jan 1918, his «Four Principles» of 11 Feb, his speech on «Four Ends» of 4 Jul rings a bell around the world; the timing is good; German diplomats understand that there is something there for them [180704]; (See **Battles of/Last Hundred Days; Supreme War Council**).

Windsor, George V: King of Great Britain; Negotiations with Henry of Prussia [140726];

X

Y

Yarmouth. England. naval bombardment [141102];

Ypres. Belgium. Focus of advances after Race to the Sea and retreat from Belgium [141009]; renewed Falkenhayn offensive against Ypres (5-11 Nov) [141106]; end of Race to the Sea [141119];

Yser River. Battle [141018]; flooding; defending sluice gates with monitors, Adm Hood [141028];

Yugoslavia. The Corfu Declaration (*Déclaration de Corfou*): Serbs in exile in Corfu sign a Declaration with representatives of Croatia, Slovenia and Austro-Hungarian Serbs, promising a union of southern Slavs after the war; their 'Yugoslav' committee will lead to a recognized Realm, at Paris, to later be called Yugoslavia [170720];

Z

Zeebrugge. Belgium. [140929]; Retreat [141009];

Zeppelins. British bombardment of Zeppelin hangar at Dixmude [141225]; first attack on British isles [150119]; Op on Paris [150321]; raid over London by Kapitan Heinrich Mathy [150415]; airman Warneford RNAS first to destroy Z. [150618]; Balfour on the challenge of defending against Zeppelins [150810]; raids on London 1915 [150908]; *attaques contre Edimbourg*, [160403]; *La Fusée Le Prieur*: anti-balloon rockets [160522]; Gotha bombers have now overtaken Zeppelins as bombing platforms [170525];

Zimmermann, Arthur. Fr. *Sous-ministres des Affaires extérieures d'Allemagne; contre médiation* [141110]; Foreign Secretary, he sends the famous Zimmermann telegram; full text [170301];

Zvornik. Serbia [140813];